

ENGLISH-RUSSIAN
GRAMMAR
OR
PRINCIPLES

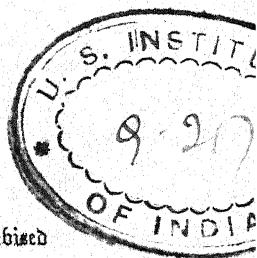
OF THE
RUSSIAN LANGUAGE

FOR THE USE OF THE ENGLISH

with synoptical Tables for the Declensions and Conjugations, graduated
Themes or Exercises for the application of the grammatical Rules,
the correct Construction of these Exercises and the
Accentuation of all the Russian words

BY

CH. PH. REIFF



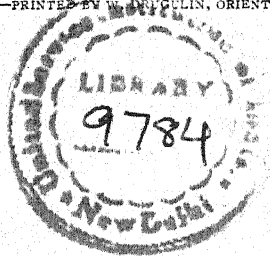
Fourth Edition carefully revised

PARIS
MAISONNEUVE AND Co.
25, QUAI VOLTAIRE, 25

1883

9784

LEIPZIG.—PRINTED BY W. DRUGGULIN, ORIENTAL AND OLD STYLE PRINTER.



V



AUTHOR'S PREFACE

TO THE THIRD EDITION

THE first edition of this Grammar was published at St-Petersburg in 1821, in French, under the title of *Grammaire russe à l'usage des étrangers qui désirent connaître à fond les principes de cette langue*. Up to that period all the elementary books, relating to the study of the Russian language, had been formed on the model of the Latin, which, without any sufficient reason, had been considered the type, according to which all other tongues must be regulated. Since that time the works of the Russian grammarians GRETSCH and VOSTOKOF, the philological Researches of PAVSKY on the formation of the Russian language and the Essay on the comparative Grammar of the Russian language by DAVYDOF, and other works on the same subject, have solved many grammatical difficulties and definitely fixed the principles of the language.

The above works I have carefully consulted in writing the new edition of my *Russian Grammar*

for the use of strangers. This edition, completely remodelled, consists of two parts. The first is the Grammar properly so called, in which I have endeavoured to give the rules with a clearness and precision which may render their retention by the memory easy. The second part consists of *Themes* or graduated *Exercises* on each particular rule, where I have placed the Russian words below the English, to serve as vocabulary. The *solution* or *correct construction* of these Exercises will be found at the end of the Grammar.

In order to render the work as extensively useful as possible to foreigners, I have published it simultaneously in three languages, French, English and German. Philologists who may wish to see the subject treated more in detail, can consult my French translation of the Russian Grammar of Mr GRETSCH, under the title of *Grammaire raisonnée de la Langue russe, précédée d'une Introduction sur l'histoire de cet idiome, de son alphabet et de sa Grammaire*, and published at St-Petersburg in 1829.

CH. R.

Carlsruhe, September 1862.



PUBLISHER'S NOTE
TO THE FOURTH EDITION

IN the Fourth Edition of the English-Russian Grammar of the late CH. REIFF, which we now place before those who wish to acquire, by an easy way, a thorough knowledge of the principles of the Russian language, no changes and alterations have been made. There was no sufficient reason of modifying and remoulding a work, the practical character and admirable arrangement of which have been appreciated by more than one competent judge. The book thus being on the whole and in substance left in its original shape, particular attention could be given to the correctness of the edition both regarding typographical errors and the justness of language.—Great pains have also been taken to render the entrance of the study of Russian more accessive by adopting a phonetic method for the transcription of Russian words in English; in which regard the First Part of the grammar has undergone an entire renovation.

Mr. CHAMIZER-LENOIR, a linguist well-known by his deserving exertions in this province, has committed himself to the task; and this scholar did his best in preparing the work for the press, and in carefully revising the sheets as they passed through the same.

We hope that this handy and neat new edition of a book, which, in spite of some scientific shortcomings, "*has done and still can do real service*", will find the indulgence and patronage of the Public.

We feel at last much indebted to the Oriental Printing-Office of W. DRUGULIN for the excellent getting up and carrying through of this volume.

M. & Co.

RUSSIAN GRAMMAR

PART FIRST

LEXICOLOGY.

- I.—THIS *Russian Grammar* is divided into four Division. parts, viz:
- I. *Lexicology* (словопроизведе́ние), or words considered as sounds of the human voice and as the elements of speech.
 - II. *Syntax* (словосочине́ние), or agreement and construction of words in sentences.
 - III. *Orthography* (правописа́ние), or the proper use of letters to represent words.
 - IV. *Prosody* (слоγοударе́ние), or *Orthoepey* (праворѣ́че), i. e. the manner of uttering words with regard to their accentuation.

Sounds
or Letters.

2.—It being the especial province of this science to explain every thing concerning the knowledge of words, it considers these first of all as mere sounds, and afterwards as the elements of speech. In respect then to mere sounds, words are composed of *letters* (бѹКВЫ); and a collection of these letters or signs representing the particular sounds of which the words of a language are composed, is called *Alphabet* (Азбѹка).

Alphabet.

3.—The Russian Alphabet now in use contains 36 letters, the roman and italic *types* of which, as used in printing, also the *caligraphic characters* or hand-writing, with their modern and ancient *appellation*, and their corresponding *value* of sound, are represented in the following table.

The Russian Alphabet is borrowed from the ecclesiastical Slavonic, which besides contains the following eight letters:

Ѕ Ѹ Ѡ ѡ Ѣ Ѥ Ѧ ѧ

called ЗѢЛО, УКЪ, ОТЬ, ЮСЬ, О, Я, КСИ, ПСИ for which now
are substituted З, У, ОТ, Ю, О, Я, КС, ПС.

The letter Ѣ has hitherto not been comprised among the number of the letters of the Alphabet; for which reason it is placed at the end of it.—Russian printers have for some time now pretty generally substituted the small capital т for the common Ѣ, and this т we have made use of, both in this Grammar and in our Dictionary.

RUSSIAN ALPHABET.

| Types. | | Caligraphic characters. | | Appellation. | | Value. | |
|---------------|----------------|-------------------------|--------------------|------------------|----------------|-----------------------------------|--------------------------|
| <i>roman.</i> | <i>italic.</i> | <i>Running-hand.</i> | <i>Round-hand.</i> | <i>ancient.</i> | <i>modern.</i> | <i>Proper sound.</i> | <i>Accidental sound.</i> |
| 1. А а | <i>А а</i> | <i>А а</i> | <i>А а</i> | азъ | а | а | е о |
| 2. Б б | <i>Б б</i> | <i>Б б</i> | <i>Б б</i> | бѣки | бе | б | р |
| 3. В в | <i>В в</i> | <i>В в</i> | <i>В в</i> | вѣди | ве | в | ф |
| 4. Г г | <i>Г г</i> | <i>Г г</i> | <i>Г г</i> | глаголь | ге | г, gh; k, h, kh, v | |
| 5. Д д | <i>Д д</i> | <i>Д д</i> | <i>Д д</i> | добро | де | д | т |
| 6. Е е | <i>Е е</i> | <i>Е е</i> | <i>Е е</i> | есть | е | уа, а (in yate, in yoke, gate) | уо, о (met) (no) |
| 7. Ж ж | <i>Ж ж</i> | <i>Ж ж</i> | <i>Ж ж</i> | живѣте | же | zsh | sh |
| 8. З з | <i>З з</i> | <i>З з</i> | <i>З з</i> | земля | зе | з | с |
| 9. И и | <i>И и</i> | <i>И и</i> | <i>И и</i> | иже | и | ее, i (in pine) | уе |
| 10. І і | <i>І і</i> | <i>І і</i> | <i>І і</i> | і (десятеричное) | | ее, i (in pine) | |
| 11. К к | <i>К к</i> | <i>К к</i> | <i>К к</i> | како | ка | к | gh, kh |
| 12. Л л | <i>Л л</i> | <i>Л л</i> | <i>Л л</i> | люди | эль | l, ll | |
| 13. М м | <i>М м</i> | <i>М м</i> | <i>М м</i> | мыслѣте | эмъ | m | |
| 14. Н н | <i>Н н</i> | <i>Н н</i> | <i>Н н</i> | нашъ | энъ | n | |
| 15. О о | <i>О о</i> | <i>О о</i> | <i>О о</i> | онъ | о | ō | a (in far) |
| 16. П п | <i>П п</i> | <i>П п</i> | <i>П п</i> | покой | пе | p | |
| 17. Р р | <i>Р р</i> | <i>Р р</i> | <i>Р р</i> | рцы | эръ | r | |
| 18. С с | <i>С с</i> | <i>С с</i> | <i>С с</i> | слово | зсъ | s, ss | z |

| Types. | | Caligraphic characters. | | Appellation. | | Value. | |
|---------------|----------------|-------------------------|----------------------|-----------------|----------------|----------------------|----------------------------------|
| <i>roman.</i> | <i>italic.</i> | <i>Round-hand.</i> | <i>Running-hand.</i> | <i>ancient.</i> | <i>modern.</i> | <i>Proper sound.</i> | <i>Accidental sound.</i> |
| 19. Т т | T t | Т т | т | твёрдо | те | t | d |
| 20. У у | У у | У у | у | у | у | oo, u | (intub) |
| 21. Ф ф | Ф ф | Ф ф | ф | фертъ | эфъ | f, ph | |
| 22. Х х | Х х | Х х | х | хѣръ | ха | kh, ch | |
| 23. Ц ц | Ц ц | Ц ц | ц | цы | це | ts | |
| 24. Ч ч | Ч ч | Ч ч | ч | червь | че | ch, tsh | sh |
| 25. Ш ш | Ш ш | Ш ш | ш | ша | | sh | |
| 26. Щ щ | Щ щ | Щ щ | щ | ща | | sh-tsh | sh |
| 27. Ъ ъ | Ъ ъ | Ъ ъ | ъ | ѣръ | | e | mute |
| 28. Ы ы | Ы ы | Ы ы | ы | ѣры | | e | thick we |
| 29. Ь ь | Ь ь | Ь ь | ь | ѣрь | | y | mute |
| 30. Ъ ъ | Ъ ъ | Ъ ъ | ъ | ять | | yah, ā | yo |
| 31. Э э | Э э | Э э | э | э | | e | (in met) |
| 32. Ю ю | Ю ю | Ю ю | ю | ю | | you | u Fr. |
| 33. Я я | Я я | Я я | я | я | | ya | ye, e (in yard) (in yet, met) |
| 34. Ѳ ѳ | Ѳ ѳ | Ѳ ѳ | ѳ | ѳнѳа | | f | |
| 35. Ѳ ѳ | Ѳ ѳ | Ѳ ѳ | ѳ | ѳиѳа | | ee, i | (in pin) |
| 36. Ѳ ѳ | Ѳ ѳ | Ѳ ѳ | ѳ | и съ краткой | | y | mute |

RUSSIAN WRITTEN ALPHABET.

А а М м W Ww
 Ё ё Н н W Ww
 В в О о Z z
 Т т П п L l
 Д д Р р Z z
 Е е С с Z z
 Ж ж М м Z z
 З з У у Ю ю
 И и Ф ф Я я
 Г г Х х О о
 К к Ц ц V v
 Л л Ч ч W w

Звукъ Русскій, будучи управленъ дрова
 немъ и вурсанъ Писателъ умнаго, но:
 жеть равняться нынъ въ силъ красоты
 и пріятности съ лучшими звуками
 древности и нашихъ временъ.

Division of
the letters.

4.—The 36 letters of the Russian alphabet contain 12 *vowels* (гласныя), viz: а, е, и, о, у, ы, ъ, э, ю, я, ѳ, of which the following five: е, ѳ, я, ю, ы, may be called *diphthongs* (дугласныя); 3 *semi-vowels* (полугласныя): ѳ, ѳ, ѳ, and 21 *consonants* (согласныя), viz: б, в, г, д, ж, з, к, л, м, н, п, р, с, т, ф, х, ц, ч, ш, щ, ѳ.

5.—The vowels and semi-vowels, with regard to their sounds, are *hard*, *soft* or *moderate*; and the consonants, according to their degree of intensity, are *strong*, *feeble* or *liquid*, viz:

| I. VOWELS. | | III. CONSONANTS. | |
|---|------------------|---|--|
| 1. <i>Hard</i> : {and those corresponding:} | 2. <i>Soft</i> : | 1. <i>Strong</i> : {and those corresponding:} | 2. <i>Feeble</i> : |
| а | я | п | б |
| э | е | ф | в |
| ы | ѳ, ѳ | к | г (g lat.) |
| о | ѳ (io) | х | г (h lat.) |
| у | ю | ш | ж |
| 3. <i>Moderate</i> : | | т | д |
| ѳ. | | с | з |
| II. SEMI-VOWELS. | | ц (тс) . (дз) | These three have no sign of their own. |
| 1. <i>Hard</i> : {and those corresponding:} | 2. <i>Soft</i> : | ч (тш) . (дж) | |
| ѳ | ѳ, ѳ | ш (штш) (жлж) | |
| | | 3. <i>Liquid</i> . | |
| | | л, м, н, р. | |

6.—According to the particular organ of speech which gives utterance to the consonants, they are divided into:

1. *Gutturals* (гортанныя), pronounced in the throat:
г, к, х.
2. *Palatals* (поднёбныя), uttered by the palate:
л, н, р.
3. *Dentals* (зубныя), sounded by the aid of and against the teeth: д, т.

Гортанныя

Поднёбныя

Зубныя

4. *Lingual* (язычная), articulated by means of applying the tongue closely to the upper teeth: *аwzychnaaw*
5. *Labials* (губныя), produced between the lips: *губныaw*
б, в, м, п, ф.
6. *Lispings* (шепелёватыя), produced by a whistling of the tongue against the palate: *shepalavatyaw*
7. *Hissings* (шипящія), sounded by a whistling of the tongue against the root of the lower teeth:
ж, ч, ш, щ.

The vowel *у* and the consonant *ѳ* have not been included in the divisions, being found only in a few words taken from the Greek, and the former, with regard to pronunciation, being identical with *и*, and the latter with *ф*.

7.—In the foregoing table of the letters we have pointed out their *proper* and *accidental sounds*; the proper sound being the one they usually have, or when used separately, whereas they receive their accidental sound from a particular situation. This accidental sound, and more especially with regard to the vowels, depends upon the *tonic accent* (ударёніе), of which more hereafter (§ 12).

Pronunciation of the letters.

The rules we are about to give of the pronunciation of the Russian letters, are taken from the dialect of Great-Russia, such as it is spoken at the Court, among the polished and literary world. Other dialects of the Russian tongue are those of Little-Russia, White-Russia, Novgorod, Soozdal and that of Olonetz; all of which however differ not more materially from the Moscovite dialect, than by their pronunciation and the use of some particular expressions.

8.—The vowels, in the Russian language, are differently pronounced according to the place they occupy in a word, or as they are accented or not.

Vowels.

| | | |
|-------|---------------------|---|
| А, а. | { Proper sound, | { a (in <i>far</i>): азбука, <i>alphabet</i> ; каша, <i>oat-meal</i> . |
| | | { e (in <i>pen</i>): ужасъ, <i>dread</i> ; часы, <i>watch</i> ; лошадь, <i>horse</i> . |
| | { Accidental sound, | { o (in <i>go</i>): большаго, <i>great</i> ; худъ, <i>bad</i> . |

This vowel *a* is pronounced as *ah* or *a* (in *fat*); but: 1) It has the sound of short *e* after the hissing consonants (ж, ч, ш, щ) in the middle of a word, when not accented; at the end of words however, whether accented or not, it retains its proper sound.—2) In the termination *ago* of the genitive of adjectives, when accented, it has the sound of long *o*. Thus the above words are pronounced: *ahzbooka*, *kàhsha*, *oòzhshess*, *tshessèè*, *lòhshad*, *bahlshòhva*, *khudòhva*.

| | | |
|-------|-----------------|---|
| Я, я. | { Proper sound, | { ya (in <i>yard</i>): яма, <i>ditch</i> ; мясо, <i>meat</i> ; земля, <i>earth</i> . |
| | | { ye, e (in <i>yet</i>): ядро, <i>kernel</i> ; девять, <i>nine</i> . |

The vowel *я*, when accented, has the sound of the diphthong *yàh* (*yàhma*, *myàhso*, *zèmyah*); but if not accented, it is pronounced *ye* (in *yap*) at the beginning of words and syllables, and *e* (in *get*) after a consonant (*yadrò*, *dàvet*). At the end of words, whether accented or not, it preserves its proper sound; thus заря, *dawn*; время, *time*, are pronounced *zaryàh*, *vraìmyah*. The pronoun ея, *of her*, is pronounced *yayòh*, and the syllable ся of pronominal verbs is pronounced *sah* as: стараться, *to exert one's self* (*stahràhtsah*).

| | | |
|-------|-----------------|---|
| Е, е. | { Proper sound, | { ya, a (in <i>yate, gate</i>) единъ, <i>one</i> ; cié, <i>this</i> ; сердце, <i>heart</i> . |
| | | { yo, o (in <i>yoke</i>): берёза, <i>birch-tree</i> ; жёлтый, <i>yellow</i> . |

At the beginning of words and syllables the vowel *e* is pronounced *yai*, but after a consonant purely as long *a* or short *e*; the above words therefore are pronounced *yaideèn*, *seeyaie*, *sairtse*. This vowel, when accented, sounds like *yo* (in *yoke*), or, after a hissing and the lingual consonant (ж, ч, ш, щ, ц), like *oh* in the following cases, viz: 1) when standing before a consonant followed by one of the hard vowels, *a*, *o*, *y*, *ы*, *э*; 2) at the end of words; 3) in the termination *ею* or *еѹ* of the instrumental singular case of feminine nouns; 4) before the gutturals (г, к, х) or the simple hissing sounds (ж, ш), which do not allow of a hard vowel after them; 5) in the present tense of verbs, although followed by a soft vowel. Thus the words ёлка, *fir*; слёзы, *tears*; лёдъ, *ice*; житьё, *life*; моё, *my*; землёю, *by the earth*; далёкіѹ, *distant*; несёшь, *thou carriest*; несёте, *you carry*; шелкъ, *silk*; лицё, *face*; душею, *with the soul*, are pronounced *yòlka*, *slyòzee*, *lyot*, *zsheetyò*, *mah-yò*, *zamyòyou*, *dalyòkee*, *nessyòsh*, *nessyòtai*, *shòlk*, *leetsò*, *dooshòyou*. It is this pronunciation *yo* or *o* that it is customary now to point out by a diæresis over the vowel *e*; берёза, жёлтый, ёлка, &c., and in this manner it has been distinguished, throughout this Grammar. This vowel *ë* serves besides to give the French pronunciation of *eu*, as in Монтеस्कьё (*Fr. Montesquieu*).

| | | | | |
|-------|---|-------------------|---|--|
| Б, б. | { | Proper sound, | { | ya, a (in <i>yate, gate</i>): ЪМЪ, <i>I eat</i> ; вѣра, <i>faith</i> . |
| | | Accidental sound, | { | yo (in <i>yoke</i>): ГНѢЗДА, <i>nests</i> ; ЗВѢЗДЫ, stars. |

This vowel *u* at the beginning of words and syllables sounds like *yai*; but after a consonant like long *a* or short *e* (*yaim*, *vairra*). However after the consonant *h*

the diphthongal sound is felt rather stronger; thus нѣтъ, *no*; нѣмой, *dumb*, are pronounced *nyet*, *nyamòy*. When accented, this vowel has the sound of *yoh* only in the words гнѣзда, *nests*; звѣзды, *stars*; сѣдла, *saddles*; цвѣтъ, *he flourished*; обрѣтъ, *he found*; also in their derivatives and compounds, as: звѣздочка, *little star*; гнѣздышко, *little nest*; разцвѣтъ, *it bloomed*; which are pronounced *gnyòhazda*, *zvyòhazdee*, *syòhdla*, *tsvyòll*, *ahbryòll*, *zvyòhazdotshka*, *gnyòhazdishko*, *rahztsvyòll*.

О, о. { Proper sound, о: дома, *at home*; послѣ, *after*.
Accidental sound, ah: хорошо, *well*; колоколъ, *bells*.

The vowel *o*, when accented, keeps its proper sound; but if unaccented, it takes the sound of *ah*; wherefore the above words are pronounced *dòma*, *pòslai*, *kharahshòh*, *kalakalàh*. It must be observed however, that after an accented syllable, the sound of that vowel is extremely short; thus the word колоколъ, *bell*, is pronounced *kòhlokol* or *kòhl'k'l*.

И, и. { Proper sound, ee: итти, *to go*; миръ, *peace*.
Accidental sound, yee: имъ, *to them*; статьи, *articles*.

The vowel *u*, at the beginning of the various inflections of the pronoun of the third person (имъ, ихъ, ими), and after the semi-vowel *ь*, is pronounced as a diphthong, *yeeem*, *yeeemee*, *yeeekh*, *stahtyeeè*. But in every other instance it preserves its proper sound, only that after a preposition terminating with the semi-vowel *ь*, it takes the thick sound of *ы*, thus the words въ избѣ, *in the room*; съ Иваномъ, *with John*; предъидущій, *precedent*, are pronounced as if written *вызбы*, *сываномъ*, *предыдущій*.

Ы, ы. { Proper sound, e thick: сынъ, *son*; льстецы, *flatterers*.
Accidental sound, we: грибы, *mushrooms*; мы, *we*.

The sound of this vowel *u* is a thick utterance of *e*, and to get any thing like a perfect idea of this sound, it is necessary to hear it from the mouth of a Russian. After the labials (б, в, м, п, ф) it sounds very nearly like *we* pronounced very short; thus the words грибы, *mushrooms*; вы, *you*; мы, *we*; снопы, *sheaves*; шкафы, *cupboards*, are pronounced greb^{wè}, v^{wè}, m^{wè}, snaf^{wè}, sh'kaf^{wè}. The Polish language represents this sound by the letter *y*.

Ю, ю. { Proper sound, you, long *u*: югъ, *south*; люблю, *I love*.
Accidental sound, *u* French: Брюссель, *Brussels*.

This vowel *ю* has properly the diphthongal sound *you* or long *u*; wherefore the pronunciation of the above words is *youk*, *lyoublyou*. In foreign words only it takes the place of the French *u*, as in the word Брюссель, *Brussels* (Fr. *Bruxelles*.)

И, и, У, у, Э, э, V, v.—These four vowels, whether accented or not, always keep their proper sound, as in the words иерей, *priest*; миръ, *the world*; ѹжинъ, *supper*; пагуба, *loss*; ѹтотъ, *this*; мѹро, *holy chrism*, which are pronounced yer^{èy}, me^{er}, oðs^{sheen}, pàhgoobah, aítot, meèro. For the use of *i* and *v* (instead of *u*) see Orthography.

9.—The semi-vowels (ѣ, ѥ, ѥ), which are placed, Semi-vowels.
the two first after the consonants, and the last after the vowels, are only half uttered vowels, ѣ being half of the vowel *o*, and ѥ or ѥ half of the vowel *u*.

Ѣ, ѣ, Ъ, ѣ.—The hard semi-vowel ѣ entails on the consonant that precedes it, a strong and harsh sound, as though that letter was double, and has even the effect of causing a feeble consonant to be pronounced like its strong corresponding sound;

thus the words: *станѣ*, *shape*; *вязѣ*, *elm-tree*; *шесть*, *perch*; *кровѣ*, *roof*; *столѣ*, *table*; *братѣ*, *brother*; *пылѣ*, *flame*; *гусарѣ*, *hussar*; *обѣ*, *from*; *гладѣ*, *hunger*; *семѣ*, *this*; *цѣпѣ*, *flail*, are pronounced *stann*, *vyass*, *shesst*, *krohff*, *stoll*, *brahtt*, *peel*, *goosàrr*, *ohpp*, *glalitt*, *semm*, *tsepp*. On the other hand, the soft semi-vowel *ь* confers a liquifying (*Fr. mouillé*) and slender sound on the preceding consonant; thus the words: *станѣ*, *become*, *вязѣ*, *marsh*; *шесть*, *six*; *кровѣ*, *blood*; *столѣ*, *so much*; *братѣ*, *to take*; *пылѣ*, *dust*; *гусарѣ*, *goose-herd*; *Обѣ*, *the Obi*; *гладѣ*, *smooth road*; *семѣ*, *seven*; *цѣпѣ*, *chain*, are pronounced *stahnⁱ* (like *gn* in the French *Allemagne*), *vyazⁱ*, *sheshtⁱ*, *krotⁱ*, *stohlⁱ*, *brahtⁱ*, *peelⁱ*, *goosàrⁱ*, *ohbⁱ*, *glàdⁱ*, *semⁱ*, *tseppⁱ*, by causing the *i* to be slightly vibrated and to expire, as it were, within the mouth; the sound and the mechanism for producing it, being closely allied to what is heard in the French words *péril*, *soleil*, *campagne*, *cigogne*, *ligne*. After the hissing consonants (ж, ч, ш, щ) the sounds of the semi-vowels *ъ* and *ь* are the same and differ in nothing from each other; thus the words *ножѣ*, *knife*, and *рожѣ*, *rye*; *мечѣ*, *sword*, and *сѣчѣ*, *to cut*; *камышѣ*, *reed*, and *мышѣ*, *mouse*; *тошѣ*, *fasting*, and *ношѣ*, *night*, are pronounced *nohsh* and *rohsh*, *metch* and *setch*, *kahmeesh* and *meesh*, *tohshⁱtsh* and *nohshⁱtsh*.

Й, ѣ.—The soft semi-vowel *й* is pronounced very rapidly and short along with the vowel that precedes it, and with which it forms but one syllable; thus the words *дай*, *give*; *пей*, *drink*: *мой*, *my*; *жуй*, *chew*; *вѣй*, *blow*; *капѣй*, *brownbay*, are pro-

nounced *daⁱ*, or like *di* in *die*, *peⁱ*, *moⁱ*, *zshui*, *vaⁱ*, *kareeⁱ*, givin gutterance to a short *i* after the vowel.

10.—The consonants, in the Russian language, Consonants.
as will be seen below, have also various sounds, viz:

| | | | |
|-------|-----------------|---|--|
| Б, б. | } Proper sound, | { | <i>b</i> : бѣба, <i>old woman</i> ; бобѣ, <i>bean</i> ; бѣбка, <i>cockle</i> . |
| В, в. | | | <i>v</i> : вонѣ, <i>away</i> ; ровѣ, <i>ditch</i> ; вторникѣ, <i>Tuesday</i> . |
| Д, д. | | | <i>d</i> : дно, <i>bottom</i> ; родѣ, <i>kind</i> ; водка, <i>brandy</i> . |
| Ж, ж. | | | <i>zh</i> : жду, <i>I wait</i> ; мужѣ, <i>husband</i> ; ложка, <i>spoon</i> . |
| З, з. | | | <i>z</i> : звонѣ, <i>sound</i> ; глазѣ, <i>eye</i> ; сказка, <i>story</i> . |

The feeble consonants б, в, д, ж, з, retain their proper sound before the vowels, before the liquid and other feeble consonants, observing that ж (French *j*) is now represented in English by *zsh*. But before the strong consonants and at the end of words terminating in the hard semi-vowel (ѣ), they assume the utterance of their corresponding strong letters (п, ф, т, ш, с). Thus the above words are pronounced *bàbah*, *boh^p*, *bàpka*, *volunn*, *rohff*, *fiòhrneek*, *dno*, *rott*, *vdhtkah*, *zshⁱ doo*, *moosh*, *dhshkah*, *zvonn*, *glahss*, *skàska*. In words where з is followed by н, the letter д is silent: thus поздно, *late*; праздникѣ, *feast*, are pronounced *pòh^zno*, *pràh^zneek*. The word дождикѣ, *rain*, is pronounced *dòh^zshⁱ zsheek*.

| | | |
|-------|---|---|
| Г, г. | { | Proper sound, <i>g gh</i> : гора, <i>mountain</i> ; погибелѣ, <i>perdition</i> . |
| | | Accidental sound, { <i>k</i> : другѣ, <i>friend</i> ; могущиѣ, <i>who could</i> . <i>h</i> : Господѣ, <i>Lord</i> ; Бога, <i>of God</i> . <i>kh</i> , <i>ch</i> : Богѣ, <i>God</i> ; легкиѣ, <i>light</i> . <i>v</i> : краснаго, <i>red</i> ; его, <i>of him</i> . |

In the beginning and in the middle of words the consonant г preserves its proper sound, being articulated with a slight vocalized aspiration, something like the Hibernian *g* when pronounced hard (*gharàh*,

pahgheèbel). The accidental sound takes place in the following cases: 1) At the end of words and before the consonant *ш*, it takes the hard utterance of *к* (*drook, mōhkshe*).—In the words Господь, *Lord*; блáго, *well*, and the various inflections of the noun Богъ, *God* (Бóга, Бóгу, Бóгомъ) it is an aspirated (*hospòhd, blàho, bòhhah, bòhhoo, bòhhomn*).—3) In the words Богъ, *God*, and убогъ, *poor*; before a strong consonant, as лѣркии, *light*; лѣгче, *lighter*; ногти, *the nails*, and in the foreign words ending in *пз*, as Петербѹргъ, *Petersburg*; Кенигсбѣргъ, *Königsberg*, it takes the hard guttural sound of *x* (Germ. *ch, boch, ooboch, lyochkee, laichshai, nòchtee, paiterboorch, kainigsbèrch*).—4) In inflections аго, яго, его, of adjectives and pronouns, it is pronounced as *v* (*kràsnaivah, yavvòh*).—5) In words derived from foreign languages, it is pronounced either *g* or aspirated *h*, according to the original sound which it is intended to supply, as in the words геогрáфiя, *geography*; гувѣрнiя, *government*; герóй, *hero*; госпiтáль, *hospital*.

| | | |
|-------|---|---|
| К, к. | { | Proper sound, <i>к</i> : крестъ, <i>cross</i> ; зѣркаю, <i>mirror</i> . |
| | | Accidental sound, { <i>gh</i> : къ Бóгу, <i>to God</i> ; къ землѣ, <i>to the earth</i> . <i>kh, ch</i> : кто, <i>who</i> ; къ кому, <i>to whom</i> . |

The consonant *к* when placed before the feeble consonants б, г, д, ж, з, takes the sound of its corresponding feeble *z* (*gh' bòhoo, gh' zaimlai*), and before the consonants н, т, ч, it takes the articulation of *x* (*khto, kh'kahmòd*). In every other instance it preserves its proper sound (*kresst, zairkahlo*).

The compound consonant *ш* (шш), which has the three distinct sounds of *sh-t-sh* or *s-t-sh*, and which the Poles represent by *szcz*, has the simple sound of *u* before the consonant *u*; the above words consequently are pronounced *sh'tshitt*, or *stchitt*, *shvosh'tsh*, and *ahvahshnòy*, *pahmòhshnik*.

| | | |
|-------|-------------|---|
| П, п. | } | } <i>p</i> : ПАВЛІНЪ, <i>pea-cock</i> ; СТОЛПЪ, <i>column</i> . |
| Ф, ф. | | |
| Х, х. | } | } <i>kh</i> , Germ. <i>ch</i> : ХРАМЪ, <i>temple</i> ; ДУХЪ, <i>odour</i> . |
| | | |
| Ш, ш. | | <i>sh</i> , Fr. <i>ch</i> , Germ. <i>sch</i> , Pol. <i>sz</i> : ШАЛАНГЪ, <i>cottage</i> . |
| Ц, ц. | } | } <i>ts</i> , Germ. <i>z</i> : ЦАРЬ, <i>king</i> ; ПЕРЕЦЪ, <i>pepper</i> . |
| Ө, ө. | | |

Thes six strong consonants keep their proper sound, and consequently the above words are pronounced *pa-vleèn*, *stòhlp*, *fahnàr*, *schoofyà*, *khrahnm*, *dookh*, *shah-làsh*, *tsar*, *pàhrets*, *fe-àht'r*, *afeènee*, observing that *r* is pronounced as in the Scotch *loch* or German *Dach*. For the use of the consonant *ө*, which is pronounced the same as *gh*, see Orthography.

| | | |
|-------|-----------------|--|
| Л, л. | } Proper sound, | <i>l</i> : ладъ, <i>accord</i> ; лядъ, <i>ill-luck</i> . |
| М, м. | | <i>m</i> : всемъ, <i>to all</i> ; восемь, <i>eight</i> . |
| Н, н. | | <i>n</i> : тронъ, <i>throne</i> ; тронь, <i>touch</i> . |
| Р, р. | | <i>r</i> : радъ, <i>glad</i> ; рядъ, <i>rank</i> . |

The liquid consonants preserve their proper sound, being strong or soft in their utterance according to the vowel or semi-vowel that follows; consequently the above words are pronounced *latt* and *lyat*, *vsaimm* and *vòhsem*; *tròhnn* and *troni*; *rahitt* and *ryahitt*. It is necessary to observe here that the Russian consonant *л*, before the hard vowels and strong con-

sonants, by no means resembles the usual English *l*, in as much as in that situation it is pronounced with much greater force, and which is obtained by a strong pressure of the tongue against the upper teeth. The Poles represent this sound by *l* with a bar (*ł*). The other three sounds correspond with those of the English language, only that the *p* has a stronger trill, partaking more of the Irish utterance of this letter.

11.—A vowel, either by itself, or joined to one or more consonants, with or without a semi-vowel, forms, in the Russian language, a *syllable* (сло́гъ, складъ); and one or several of these, used to represent a thought or sensation, form a word (сло́во). Words consequently may be *monosyllables* (одно-сло́жныя) or *polysyllables* (многосло́жныя), according to their being compounded of one or more syllables, as: *я*, and; *я*, *I*; *онъ*, *he*; *ай*, *ah*; *сей*, *this*; *два*, *two*; *страхъ*, *fright*; *зи-ма́*, *winter*; *до-ро́-га*, *road*; *до-бро-дѣ-тель*, *virtue*; *до-бро-дѣ-тель-ный*, *virtuous*, &c.

The Russian language contains a few words that have no vowel at all, or whose vowel has changed into a semi-vowel; such are the particles *въ*, *къ*, *съ*, *бъ*, *жъ*, *ль* (instead of *во*, *ко*, *со*, *бы*, *же*, *ли*). These words, called *assyllables* (безсло́жныя), are joined to the syllables of the preceding or following word, as: *въ домъ*, *in the house*; *къ окнѣ*, *towards the window*; *съ тобою*, *with thee*; *если бѣ*, *if*; *одна́ко жѣ*, *however*; *точно ль*, *is it right so?*

12.—In polysyllabic words there is always one syllable that experiences a greater stress of the voice than the rest; thus in the words *мáло*, *little*; *го-тóво*, *ready*; *говори́те*, *speak*, the syllables *ма*, *то*, *пи*, are more discernably audible than the syllables

Syllables
and words.

Tonic
accent.

lo, zo, bo, me. This modification of the voice is in fact what is meant by *tonic accent* (ударѣніе), and is indicated by a little mark over the vowel. The accented syllable is called *long* (дѳлгіѳ), the others *short* (краткіе).

The accent is no longer printed in Russian books, except to distinguish some homonymous words and grammatical inflections of similar forms, as замѳкъ, *castle*, and замѳкъ, *lock*; слова, *of the word* (gen. sing.), and слова, *words* (nomin. plur.), as will be seen in Part IV, Prosody. It is here the place to observe that in the Russian language there is no rule by which to determine the accent, and that in one and the same word is it frequently shifted from one syllable to another; for which reason all the words used in this Grammar are printed with the accent they ought to have.

The following *Reading-exercise*, in which the reading of the Russian text is facilitated by an imitation of the sounds according to English utterance, and an interlinear literal translation added, it is confidentially hoped, will materially assist the learner to make himself master of the rules we have given on the pronunciation of the letters and words of the Russian language.

READING-EXERCISE.

| | | | | | | |
|-----------|----|-------|-----------|----------------|---------------|------|
| Вчера́ | въ | шесть | часѳвъ | ўтра | поѳхали | мы |
| Ftsherá | f' | shest | tshessǒff | oǒtra | pah-yaikhalee | mwe- |
| Yesterday | at | six | o'clock | of the morning | went | we |

| | | | | | | |
|--------------|----|-----------|------------|----------|--------------|-----------|
| верхѳмъ | въ | Пѳтсдамъ. | Ничего́ | нѳтъ | скучи́ѳе | этой |
| verkhǒmm | f' | Pǒtsdam. | Neetshaivǒ | nyet | skeeshnaiyai | altay |
| on horseback | to | Potsdam. | Nothing | there is | duller | than this |

| | | | | | | | |
|------------|-------------|------------|---------|---------|-------------|--------------|-------------|
| дорѳги: | вездѳ | глубѳкій | песѳкъ, | и | ни | какихъ | заниматель- |
| dahrǒghee: | vezdai | gloobǒkhee | pessǒk, | ee | neekahkeekh | zaneemáhtel- | |
| road: | every where | a deep | sand, | and not | any | interest- | |

| | | | | | | | |
|-------|--------------|-------------|---------|------------------|-----------------|----|------|
| ныхъ | предмѳтовъ | въ | глазѳ | не | попадаѳтся. | Но | видѳ |
| neekh | praidmaitoff | v' | glahzǎh | nai | pahpahdayetsah. | No | veet |
| ing | object | to the eyes | not | presents itself. | But the sight | | |

Потсдама, а особливо Санъ-Суси, очень хорошъ. Мы
 Potsdahmah, ah ahsahbleevo San-Soosee, ôtshain kharôsh. Mwe
of Potsdam, and above all of Sans-Souci, (is) very fine. We

остановились въ трактиръ, не доѣзжая до городскихъ воротъ.
 ahtahnahveeles f' trakteerai, nai da-yaizsh' zshâyah da garadskeekh vahrôt.
stopped at the hotel, not arriving to the city-gates.

Отдохнувъ и заказавъ обѣдъ, мы пошли въ
 Addahkhnoov ee zakazâhv ahbyaid, mwe pashlee v'
Having rested ourselves and ordered a dinner, we went into

городъ. У воротъ записали наши имена. На парадномъ
 gorot. oo varôt zahpeesählee nâshee eemainâh. Nah parâhdnom
the town. At the gates one wrote our names. On the parade-

мѣсть противъ дворца, училась гвардія: прекрасные
 maistai prôhteev dvahrtsâh, ootsheelaahs gvâhrdyah: praikràhsneeeyai
place opposite the palace, exercised the guards: very fine

люди, прекрасные мундиры! Видъ дворца со
 lyôudee, praikràhsneeeyai moondeeree! Veed dvahrtsâh sah
men, superb uniforms! The sight of the palace from

стороны сада очень хорошъ. Городъ, вообще
 starahnee sâhda ôtshain kharôsh. Ghôrod vah-ahbstshai
the side of the garden (is) very fine. The town in general

прекрасно выстроено; въ большой улицѣ много
 praikràhsno vvestroyain; v' bahlshôy ooleetsai mnôgo
(is) well built; in the great street (there are) many

великолѣпныхъ домовъ, строенныхъ отчасти по образцу
 vaileekahlaipneekh dahmôf, strôyainneekh atishâhstee pah abhbrahtsoô
of magnificent houses, built partly on the model

огромѣйшихъ римскихъ пала́тъ и на собственные деньги
 agrômneysheekh reemskeekh pahlâht ee na sôbstvainneeeyah dêynghee
of the vastest Roman palaces and at the own expences

покойнаго короля: онъ дарилъ ихъ, кому хотѣлъ. Теперъ
 rakôyuaahvah kahralyâh: on dareel yeeekh, kamoô khahtail. Taipêr
of the late king: he gave them, to whom he chose. Now

сѣи огромныя зданія пусты, или занимаются
 seeeyè agròmneeyah zdáhneeyah poóstee, eelè zaneemahyootsah
the vast edifices (are) empty, or are occupied

солдатами. — Въ Потсдамѣ есть русская церковь подѣ
 sahlidátamee. — F' Pótsdahmai yest roóskayah tsairkov pahd
by soldiers. — At Potsdam there is a Russian church under

надзираниѣмъ стараго русскаго солдата, который живѣтъ
 nahdzeeráhneeyem stàrahvah roóskahvah sahlidátah, kahtóree zsheev'yótt
the care of an old Russian soldier, who lives

тамъ со времѣнъ царствованія Императрицы Анны. Мы
 tahn sah vraimain tsárstvovaneeyah eemperatreétsee áhnnee. Mwe
there since the times of the reign of the empress Anne. We

насилу могли сыскать его. Дряхлый старикъ
 nahseeloo maghleè seeskáht yaivò. Dr'yákhlee stahreek
with difficulty could find him. The decrepit old man

сидѣлъ на большійхъ креслахъ, и услышавъ, что
 seedail na bahlsheekh kréslahkh, ee oosleëshahv shto
was sitting in a large arm-chair, and having heard that

мы Русскіе, протянулъ къ намъ руки, и
 mwe roóскеeyai, prahtyahnoól k' nahm rookee, ee
we (are) Russians, he extended towards us the hands, and

дрожащимъ голосомъ сказалъ: Слава Бóгу! Слава Бóгу!
 drahzhshástsheem gólossom skahzáhl: slávah Bòhoo! slávah Bòhoo!
with a trembling voice he said: Glory to God! Glory to God!

Онъ хотѣлъ говорить сперва съ нами по-русски: но мы
 ohn khahtail gahvareèt sperváh s' náhmee pah-roósskee: no mwe
He wanted to speak at first with us in Russian: but we

съ трудомъ могли разумѣть другъ друга. Намъ надлежало
 s' troodóm mahgleè rahzoomait droog droógah. Nam nahdlaizsháhlo
with difficulty could understand each other. To us it was obliged

повторять почти каждое слово. „Пойдѣмте въ церковь
 pahvtahryáht pahtshtèe kázshdoyai slòvo. „Pie-dyómtai f' tsairkov
to repeat almost each word. „Let us go into the church

Божію, сказа́лъ онъ, и помóлимся вмѣстѣ, хотя ны́нѣ
 Bózsheeyou, skahzáhl on, ee pahmóhleemsa vmaístai, khahtyáh neénai
of God, said he, and let us pray together, although to-day

и нѣтъ прázника.“ Сѣрдце моё напóлнилось
 ee n'yet prázneekah.“ Sairise mah-yóh napóhlineelos
even there is not any holiday.“ Heart my filled itself

благóговѣніемъ, когдá отвори́лась дверь въ цѣрковь,
 blahgahvaineeyaim, kaghdá ahtvareélas dvair f' tsairkov,
with devotion, when opened itself the door into the church,

гдѣ стóлько врѣмени цáрствуетъ глубóкое молчáние,
 ghdyai stólko vraimainee tsárstvooyet gloobókoyai mahltsháneeyai.
where so much of time reigns a profound silence,

едвá перерывáемое слáбыми вздóхами и тѣхймъ гóлосомъ
 yaidváh perereeváyimoyai sláhbemee vzdókhahmee ee teekheem ghólossom
hardly interrupted by the feeble groans and the soft voice

стáрца, котóрый по воскресѣніямъ прихóдитъ тудá читáть
 stártsah, kahtóhree pah vahskraisainyahm preekhóhdeet toodáh tsheetáht
of old man, who on the sundays comes there to read

святѣйшую изъ книгъ, пригото́вляющую егó къ
 svahtéyshooyou eez kneegh, preegahtahvlyáyoustshooyou yaivóh k'
the most holy of the books, preparing him to

блáженной вѣчнóсти. Въ цѣркви всё чистó. Цѣрковныя
 blahzshainnoy vaitshnostee. F' tsairkvee fsyo tsheetsto. Tsairkóvneeyah
the happy eternity. In the church all (is) clean. Church-

кни́ги и ў́тваръ храня́тся въ сунду́кѣ. Отъ врѣмени до
 kneeghee ee oótvahr khrahnyátsah f' soondookai. Aht vraimenee doh
books and ornaments are kept in a trunk. From time to

врѣмени старикъ перебира́етъ ихъ съ молит́вою. „Чáсто
 vraimainee stáhtreek perebeeráyait yeeekh s' mahleetvoyoou. „Tshásto
time the old man arranges them with prayer. „Often

отъ всегó сѣрдца, сказа́лъ онъ, сокрушáюсь я о томъ, что
 aht fsaivó sairtsah, skahzáhl on, sahkroosháyous yah ah tomm, shto
from all the heart, said he, grieve myself I of that, that

по смѣрти моѣй, которая отъ меня конечно уже не
 pah smairtee mah-yey, kahtórayah aht mainyah kahnáishno oozshai nai
after death my, which from me certainly already not (is)

далѣко, нѣ кому будетъ смотрѣть за цѣрковью.“ — Съ
 dahlyóhko, nai kahmoo bóódaít smahtráit zah tsáirkovyoyu.“ — S'
far, no person will watch over the church.“ — During

полчасá пробыли мы въ семъ священномъ мѣстѣ,
 poltshahsá próbwelée mwe f' saim svyahststshainnom maístai,
half an hour remained we in this holy spot,

прости́лся съ почтеннымъ старикомъ, и пожела́ли ему
 prahstélees s' pahstshainneem stahreekóm, ee pahzsháilalee yaimoo
bade farewell with the venerable old man, and wished him

тихой смѣрти.
 teekhoy smairtee.
an easy death.

Карамзинъ.
 Kahrahmzeén.

Elements
 of speech.

13.—Words, when considered as the elements of speech, are either *denominative* (знаменательныя) or *auxiliary* (служебныя). The former express the idea of objects, of their qualities or actions; the latter merely design the connexion that exists among the denominative words; thus in this phrase: Птицы летаютъ по воздуху, а рыбы живутъ въ водѣ, *birds fly in the air, and fishes live in water*, the denominative words are: *птицы, летаютъ, воздуху, рыбы, живутъ, водѣ*, and the auxiliary words are: *по, а, въ*. The former are called the *parts* (части), and the latter the *particles of speech* (частицы рѣчи). The parts and particles of speech, in the Russian language, may be brought under nine different heads; namely:

I. PARTS OF SPEECH:

1. The *substantive* (имѣя существительное).
2. The *adjective* (имѣя прилагательное).
3. The *pronoun* (мѣстоимѣніе).
4. The *verb* (глаголь).
5. The *participle* (причастіе).
6. The *adverb* (нарѣчіе) and the *gerund* (дѣепричастіе).

II. PARTICLES OF SPEECH:

7. The *preposition* (предлогъ).
8. The *conjunction* (союзъ).
9. The *interjection* (междомѣтіе).

Certain languages, such as the French, German, English and others, make use of a distinctive word before a common noun, whenever employed in speech, unless the same be sufficiently determined by the accompanying word; thus the French say: *le chapeau, la plume*; the German: *der Hut, die Feder*, and the English: *the hat, the pen*. If the common noun, however, be taken in an indeterminate sense, it is then preceded by another word; as: *un chapeau, une plume*; *ein Hut, eine Feder*; *a hat, a pen*. This kind of word is called *article* (членъ), and distinguished in those tongues by the *definite* and *indefinite* article. In French the articles are: *le, la, les*, and *un, une, des*; in German: *der, die, das, die*, and *ein, eine*; in English: *the* and *a* or *an*. The Russian language has no articles, it being left to the sense of the sentence to indicate whether the common noun is taken in a determinate or indeterminate sense. This deficiency is sometimes also supplied by other words, such as *тотъ, this*, to indicate a determinate, and *нѣкоторый, certain*, to indicate an indeterminate sense; as: *Тотъ человекъ, о которомъ вы говорите, пришѣлъ ко мнѣ, the man of whom you speak, is come to me; нѣкоторый человекъ пришѣлъ ко мнѣ, a man is come to me.*

14.—All words, whether parts of speech or particles, are either *primitive* or *derivative*, *simple* or *compound*. The *primitives* (первообразныя) are such

Division
of words.

as are not formed from other words; e. g. садъ, *garden*; жена, *woman*; бѣлый, *white*; жить, *to live*. The *derivatives* (производныя) are such as are formed from words already existing in the language, e. g. садовникъ, *gardener*; женскій, *womanly*; бѣлизна, *whiteness*; пережить, *to over-live*. *Compounds* (сложныя) are formed of two denominative words; e. g. садоводство, *horticulture*, from садъ, *garden* (lat. *hortus*), and водить, *cultivate*; трудолюбіе, *love of work*, from трудъ, *work*, and любить, *to love*. All other words, whether primitive or derivative, are *simple* (простыя).

Roots
of words.

15.—Every word, whether primitive or derivative, simple or compound, is formed from *roots* (корни), or from radical syllables and letters, which become words by the junction of other roots. Thus in the words: зрю, *I see*; зрѣніе, *the sight*; зримый, *visible*; зоркій, *sharp-sighted*; обозрѣть, *to examine*, the root is the syllable зор or the mixed consonant зр, which becomes significant by the addition of the syllables ю, ніе, имый, кій, обо, &c.—The roots may be divided into *principal* and *secondary*. 1) The *principal* roots (главные) are such as serve to form denominative words, or parts of speech; such are the roots вид, ок, рук, whence the words видъ, *sight*; око, *eye*; рука, *hand*, are formed. 2) The *secondary* roots (придаточные) are those from which, in the first place, auxiliary words or particles are formed, e. g. изъ, *of*; въ, *in*; съ, *with*; and which afterwards serve to form words by being united with the principal roots; e. g. видный, *visible*; очки, *spectacles*; поручить, *to commit*. Thus the secondary roots

are: *a) initial* (предъидущіе), placed at the beginning of words, and called *prefixes* or *prepositions*, e. g. у-ходъ, *departure*; от-казъ, *refusal*; and *b) final* (послѣдующіе), which form the terminations of words, and are called *suffixes*, e. g. вод-а, *water*; зем-ля, *earth*; крас-ный, *red*; дѣл-ать, *to do*.

In order to trace Russian words properly so called, that is to say Slavonian words, to their roots, the learner will do well to proceed in the following manner. Let us take as examples the words *преизбыточествовать*, *to superabound*, and *засвидѣтельствова́ніе*, *attestation*. After taking away the initial secondary roots *пре* and *за*, and the finals *ать* and *аніе*, there remain the words *избыточество*, *abundance*, and *свидѣтельство*, *testimony*, which are derived from *избытокъ*, *superfluity*, and *свидѣтель* (in Slavonian *свѣдѣтель*), *witness*. These last mentioned are themselves derived from *избытъ*, *to abound*, and *свѣдѣтъ*, *to know*; words which are formed of the prepositions *изъ* and *съ*, joined to the simple verbs *бытъ*, *to be*, and *вѣдѣтъ* or *вѣдать*, *to know*, from whence if we take away the terminations of the infinitive, there remain *бы* and *вѣд*. We thus see the root of the word *преизбыточествовать* is **БЫ**; the steps of its formation being apparent: *бытъ*, *избытъ*, *избытокъ*, *избыточество*, *избыточествовать*, *преизбыточествовать*; the word *засвидѣтельствова́ніе* has **ВѢД** for its root, whence are derived: *вѣдѣтъ* or *вѣдать*, *свѣдѣтъ*, *свѣдѣтель* (in Russian *свидѣтель*), *свидѣтельство*, *свидѣтельствова́ть*, *засвидѣтельствова́ть*, *засвидѣтельствова́ніе*.

Every Russian word of Slavonian origin may be submitted to the same process of dissection, and the learner will find the following words appropriate as an exercise: *независимость*, *independence*; *неизмѣримый*, *immensurable*; *предсѣдательствовать*, *to preside*; *состраданіе*, *compassion*; *изобрѣтательность*, *invention, inventive faculty*; *вспомогательный*, *auxiliary*; *честолюбіе*, *ambition*; *удовлетворительный*, *satisfactory*; *путешественникъ*, *traveller*; *законодательство*, *legislation*; *земледѣльскій*, *agricultural*; *паредворецъ*, *courtier*.

Inflections
of words.

16.—The parts of speech, or denominative words, are distinguished from the particles, or auxiliary words, by being subject to sundry *inflections* (измѣненія), which are usually of two kinds: *constant* (постоянные) and *accidental* (случайныя).—1) The *constant* inflections are met with in the structure of derivative and compound words. This is what is called the *formation* (образованіе) of a word; e. g. царь, *king*; царица, *queen*; царскій, *royal*; царство, *kingdom*; царственный, *of the kingdom*; царствовать, *to reign*; царствованіе, *reigning*.—2) The *accidental* inflections are the different terminations and prepositions which a word takes, and which without changing its nature serve to express some circumstance connected with the idea designated by the word; e. g. рука, *the hand*; рукою, *with the hand*; руки, *the hands*; вижу, *I see*; видишь, *thou seest*; бѣлый, *white*; бѣлѣйшій, *whiter*; побѣлѣе, *a little whiter*, &c.

Metaplasms
of words.

17.—The different inflections of which words are susceptible, undergo, in order to facilitate the pronunciation, *metaplasms* (перемѣны), which at times change even the final letters of the radical word. These metaplasms or alterations consist in the *permutation* (замѣна) of one letter for another; in the *epenthesis* (вставка) and *prosthesis* (приставка) of some letters, and in the *apocope* (усѣченіе) and *syncope* (изъятіе) of others.

Permutation
of letters.

18.—The *permutation* of letters, in the Russian language, arises from the circumstance that some vowels cannot be placed in juxta-position with certain consonants; thus the hissing, guttural and lingual

consonants (ж, ч, ш, щ; г, к, х; п) cannot be joined with some vowels; the vowels я, е, ю, and the semi-vowel ъ, never admit immediately before them either the guttural consonants (г, к, х), in any inflection, or sometimes the dental and lipping consonants (д, т; з, ц); and further the vowel и, in the derivation of words, never admits before it either the gutturals or the lingual (г, к, х; п), which are then changed for the hissing consonants (ж, ч, ш, щ), as is seen below.

PERMUTATION OF LETTERS.

| | | |
|--|---------------------------------|-------------------|
| 1. The consonants г, д, з, } | | { change into ж. |
| 2. The consonants к, т, ц, } | before я, е, ю, ъ, } | { change into ч. |
| 3. The consonants х, с, } | | { change into ш. |
| 4. The consonants ек, ет, } | | { change into щ. |
| 5. The vowel я, } | after г, к, х; ж, ч, ш, щ; ц, } | { changes into а. |
| 6. The vowel ю, } | | { changes into у. |
| 7. The vowel ы, after г, к, х; ж, ч, ш, щ, . . . | | changes into и. |
| 8. The vowel о, after ж, ч, ш, щ; ц, | | changes into е. |
| 9. The vowel ъ, after the vowel и, | | changes into я. |
| 10. The semi-vowel ъ, after a vowel, | | changes into й. |
| 11. The semi-vowels ъ and Ѣ, before a consonant with ъ, change into е. | | |
| 12. The semi-vowel ъ, before two consonants, . . . | | changes into о. |

Examples: 1) *служить*, to serve; *вижу*, I see; *рѣжь*, cut, from *слуга*, servant; *видѣть*, to see; *рѣзать*, to cut; 2) *мучить*, to torment; *свѣча*, candle; *отѣчество*, native land, from *муча*, torment; *свѣтъ*, light; *отѣцъ*, father; 3) *тише*, slower; *прошѣніе*, petition, from *тихъ*, slow; *проси́тъ*, to ask; 4) *ищу́*, I seek; *чище*, purer, from *иска́тъ*, to seek; *чистъ*, pure; 5) *служи́а* (for *служисѣа*), serving; 6) *вожу́*, (for *вожюю*), I lead; 7) *ру́ки*, the hands; *мѹ́жи*, the men (for *ру́кы*, *мѹ́жы*); 8) *пальцемъ* (for *пальцомъ*), with the finger; 9) *въ Россіи* (for *въ Россію*), in Russia; 10) *недѣля*, week, has for its genitive plural *недѣль*; whilst *шея*, the neck, has *шей*; 11) *судьба́*, destiny; *копѣйка*, *копѣекъ*, have in the genitive plural *судѣбъ*, *копѣекъ* (for *судѣбъ*, *копѣйкъ*); 12) *во мнѣ*, in me; *со всѣмъ*, with all (for *въ мнѣ*, *съ всѣмъ*).

These permutations are subject to certain exceptions. The dental consonants (д, т) sometimes preserve the Slavonian per-

mutation жд and щ, as граждани́нъ, *citizen*; пи́ща, *aliment*, from гра́дъ, city; пита́тъ, to nourish. When the accented vowel *e* is pronounced *o* (after ж, ч, ш, щ, ц), the vowel *o* may be used, as хоро́шo, *well*; плечо́, *shoulder*; яйцо́, *egg*. It still remains to be observed that in words where г, к, х, ц, are changed before я and ю, as но́жка, *a little foot*; вѣ́чный, *eternal*; пасту́шка, *shepherdess*; личны́й, *personal* (from ногá, foot; вѣ́къ, an age; пасту́хъ, shepherd; личе́, individual), the change is not required by the letters н and ю, but arises from the circumstance that formerly the semi-vowel *ь*, before which the consonants т, к, х, ц, change into ж, ч, ш, was employed before those consonants (но́жка, вѣ́чный, &c.), but has been suppressed in modern orthography.

Epenthesis
and pros-
thesis.

19.—*Epenthesis*, or the insertion of a letter in the middle of a word, and *prosthesis*, or the addition of a letter at the beginning of a word, take place both to facilitate the pronunciation, and to unite letters which cannot be placed in juxta-position. The vowels *o* and *e* are inserted between two consonants at the end of words, and thus serve as a connecting link between the two roots of a compound word; e. g. огонь, *fire*; вѣ́теръ, *wind* (instead of the Slavonian огонь, вѣ́тра); законодатель, *legislator*; землеописáние, *geography*. The consonant л is inserted also after the labials (б, в, м, п, ф), when they ought to be followed by ю or е; e. g. люблю́, *I love*; дешѣ́вле, *cheaper* (from любить, to love; дешѣ́во, cheap). The consonant н is also epenthetic in вну́шать, *to suggest*; подни́мать, *to take up*; на него́, *against him*. The consonant в is sometimes added at the beginning of a word, before the vowel *o*; e. g. вoсeмь, *eight* (instead of the Slavonian осьмь); вoстрьн, *sharp*; вoтчина, *patrimony* (used familiarly for о́стрый, oтчина). The same is the

case with the vowel *o* in оржаной, of *rye* (for ржаной).

20.—*Ароскопе*, or the cutting of a letter at the end of a word, and *syncope*, or the elision of a letter in the middle of a word, are employed to facilitate or soften the pronunciation, e. g. со мной, *with me*; чтобъ, *in order that*; двинуть, *to move*; обеща́ть, *to promise*; блесну́ть, *to shine*; полтора, *one and a half* (instead of со мною, чтобы, двину́ть, обеща́ть, блесну́ть, полтора́). Ароскопе
and syncope.

THE SUBSTANTIVE.

21.—The *substantives* (существительныя имена) Division of
substantives. in the Russian language are of two kinds: common nouns or *appellatives* (нарица́тельные), as: челове́къ, *man*; го́родъ, *town*; рѣ́ка, *river*; and individual or *proper* nouns (со́бственныя), as: Влади́миръ, *Vladimir*; Москв́а, *Moscow*; Во́лга, *the Volga*.—Among the common nouns we distinguish a class called *collective* (собира́тельные), such are: наро́дъ, *people*; ста́до, *herd*; лѣ́съ, *forest*; also *material* nouns (веще́ственные), such are: му́ка, *flour*; ма́сло, *oil*; зо́лото, *gold*.—The proper names of men are of three kinds: *a*) *christian* names (крѣ́стныя имена), as: Алекса́ндръ, *Alexander*; Ле́въ, *Leon*; О́льга, *Olga*; Любо́вь, *Amy*; *b*) *patronymic* names (о́тче-ственные), as: Алекса́ндровичъ and Алекса́ндровна, *son and daughter of Alexander*; Льво́вичъ and Льво́вна, *son and daughter of Leon*; and *c*) *family* names (про́звищныя, фами́льныя), as: Держа́винъ, *Derzhavin*; Орло́въ, *Orlof*; Долгору́кий, *Dolgorouky*; Толсто́й, *Tolstoi*.

Properties
of nouns.

22.—The properties of substantives in the Russian language are, the *gender* (родъ), the *aspect* (видъ), the *number* (число) and the *case* (падѣжь). The two former are *constant* inflections, belonging to the formation of nouns; the two latter are *accidental* inflections, employed in the declension.

Genders.

23.—In the Russian language there are three genders: the *masculine* (мужескій), the *feminine* (женскій) and the *neuter* (средній). The genders of nouns are known, in the names of animate beings, by their *signification*, and in the names of inanimate and abstract objects, by their *termination*.

1. The *masculine* gender comprehends the names of animate beings of the male sex; e. g. отецъ, *the father*; герой, *the hero*; царь, *the king*; юноша, *a young man*; дядя, *an uncle*; мѣняло, *a money-changer*; подмастерье, *a journeyman*; and also, such names of inanimate and abstract objects terminating in ѣ, и, and some which end in ь, e. g. домъ, *the house*; покой, *repose*; корабль, *a vessel*.

2. The *feminine* gender comprehends the names of animate beings of the female sex; e. g. сестра, *the sister*; няня, *a nurse*; дочь, *the daughter*; Елизаветъ, *Elizabeth*; Кlio, *Clio*; also the names of inanimate and abstract objects terminating in а, я, and some which end in ь; e. g. книга, *a book*; пуля, *a ball*; добродѣтель, *virtue*.

3. The *neuter* gender comprehends the names of animate beings where the distinction of sex is not evident, as: дитя and чадо, *a child*; чудовище, *a monster*; and also the names of animate and abstract

objects terminating in *o*, *e*, and *мя*, e. g. зóлото, *gold*; мóре, *the sea*; вréмя, *the time*.

As regards the rules relating to the genders, the following observations are of importance:

1. The nouns which designate any particular species of animals, form an exception to the rule which declares the gender of nouns designating animate being to be determined by their *signification*. These nouns are, according to their *termination*, either masculine, as: чéловѣкъ, *a man*; носорогъ, *a rhinoceros*; соколъ, *a falcon*; окунь, *a perch*; or feminine, as: обезьяна, *an ape*; собака, *a dog*; лошадь, *a horse*; щука, *a pike*.

2. To determine the gender of nouns terminating in *ь*, the following rules may be given:

1) Besides such nouns as designate animate beings of the male sex, the following are *masculine*: a) The names of the months, as: январь, *January*; июль, *July*; декабрь, *December*, &c. b) The names of active objects, or agents, although inanimate, terminating in *тель*, as: числитель, *the numerator*; множитель, *the multiplier*, &c. c) The common nouns designating animate beings, as: гусь, *a goose*; лось, *an elk*; &c., with the exception of some names of animals which are feminine, such as: лошадь, *a horse*; сельдь, *a herring*; вошь, *a louse*; мышь, *a mouse*; форель, *the trout*, and some others. d) The names of towns, lakes and places, whether Russian or foreign, as: Ярославль, *Yaroslav*; Севастополь, *Sebastopol*; Брюссель, *Bruxelles*, with the exception of Казань, *Kazan*; Астрахань, *Astrachan*; Тверь, *Tvaïr*; Версаль, *Versailles*; Булонь, *Boulogne*; Марсэль, *Marseilles*; Испагань, *Isfahan*; Эривань, *Erivan*.

2) The following are *feminine*: a) All the names of abstract objects, e. g. жизнь, *life*; честь, *honour*, &c., with the exception of день, *the day*; перечень, *an extract*; вопль, *cries*; вихрь, *a whirlwind*; and foreign words, such as: контроль, *control*; пароль, *parole*; спектакль, *spectacle*; стиль, *style*. b) The names of rivers and countries; e. g. Обь, *the Obi*; Сибирь, *Siberia*, &c., except Анадырь, *Anadir*. c) The common names of inanimate objects; e. g. бровь, *the eyebrow*; ветвь, *a branch*; цѣрковь, *a church*, &c., except the following which are masculine:

| | | |
|-----------------------------|---------------------------|-----------------------------|
| алкоголь, alcohol. | костыль, a crutch-stick. | ревень, the rhubarb. |
| алтарь, an altar. | кочень, a head of cab- | ремень, a strap. |
| бемоль, B-flat. [tunic. | кремёнь, a flint. [bage. | рубли, a rooble. |
| бешмёть, Tartar under | кремль, citadel, castle. | руль, the helm. |
| бизань, mizzen-sail. | крендель, a cracknel. | сбитень, honey-tea. |
| бияль, a billiard ball. | кубёр, a top. | сераль, a seraglio. |
| блатьварь, massicot. [sail. | кудёр, curly hair. | складень, a necklace. |
| брамсе-ль, top-gallant | куко-ль, corn-cockle. | слизень, the slug. |
| бредень, a drag-net. | куль, a mat-sack. | словарь, a dictionary. |
| букварь, ABC-book. | лагерь, a camp. | срослень, double branche. |
| бюллетень, a bulletin. | лапотъ, a bast-shoe. | ставень, a window- |
| вексель, bill of exchange. | ларь, a large chest. | shutter. |
| вензель, a monogram. | лэжень, foundation beam. | стаксель, stay-sail. |
| водоуль, a tubercle. | локоть, the elbow. | стапель, stocks, launch. |
| гвоздь, a nail. | ломоть, a slice. | стебель, a stalk. |
| глаголь, a crane. | марсе-ль, top-sail. | стержень, core (of a boil). |
| горбыль, a sleeve-board. | мергёль, marl. | стихарь, the surplice. |
| госпиталь, a hospital. | мивдаль, almonds. | сударь, a winding-sheet. |
| грёбень, a comb. | миткаль, calico. | сухарь, a rusk, biscuit. |
| грифель, a slate-pencil. | монастырь, a convent. | тополь, the poplar. |
| гриздь, a fungus. | муфель, a muffle. | трёзель, the curb. |
| дэготь, tar. | нашатирь, sal ammoniac. | трифель, a truffle. |
| денарь, denarius. | николь, nickel. | туфель, a slipper. |
| дождь, rain. | ноготь, a finger-nail. | уголь, charcoal. |
| дягиль, angelica. | нуль, a cipher, zero. | уровень, a level. |
| жёлудь, an acorn. | огонь, fire. | фитиль, a match. [house]. |
| жонкиль, the jonquille. | орарь, the stole. | флигель, a wing (of a |
| золотень, golden-rod. | панцырь, coat of mail. | фонарь, a lantern. |
| зубарь, a toothed plane. | пень, a stump. | фухтель, flad side of a |
| йверень, a splinter. | перистиль, a peristyle. | хмель, the hop. [sword. |
| инбирь, ginger. | перкаль, shirting calico. | ходень, an object in mo- |
| калпиль, a quadrille. | перстень, a ring. | tion. |
| календарь, almanach. | пистоль, a pistole. | хрусталь, crystal. |
| камень, a stone. | пламень, flame. | циркуль, pair of compas- |
| картофель, potatoes. | пластырь, a plaster. | цоколь, the socle. [ses. |
| кашель, a cough. | плетень, wattled hedge. | цекмень, cosack upper- |
| кегель, a skittle. | портфель, a portfolio. | coat. |
| кёрвель, chervil. | поршень, a piston. | черноталь, bay-leaved |
| киль, the keel (of a ship). | прожежень, place chafed | willow. |
| кипень, hot-spring. | by lying. | чихирь, new wine. |
| кисель, a sourish jelly. | противень, dripping-pan. | шелудь, the scab. |
| кистень, buller tied to a | профиль, a profile. | шёфель, a bushel. |
| коготь, a claw. [string. | пузырь, a bladder. | шкворень, pole-bolt (of |
| козырь, a trump. | пупырь, a pimple. | a coach). |
| колёдезь, a well. | пустырь, a vacant space. | шпиль, a carstan. |
| копытець, wild nard. | пузь, the road. | штемпель, a stamp. |
| корабль, a ship. | пьяязь, money. | штиль, a calm. |
| корень, a root. | рашкуль, blue-black. | щавель, sorrel. |
| косарь, chopping knife. | рашпиль, a rasp. | щёбень, rubbish. |

ѡрь, the letter ѡ.

ѡкорь, an anker.

ѡсень, the ash-tree.

ѡль, the letter ѡ.

ѡнтарь, sea-amber.

ѡчмень, barley.

3. Words taken from foreign languages and ending in *u*, *y*, *ю*, as: колибри, *a humming bird*; какадѹ, *the kakatoe*; ревиѹ, *the review*, are masculine, when they signify an animate being, and neuter when signifying an inanimate object. The other parts of speech, used as substantives, are neuter; e. g. громкое урѡ, *a noisy hurrah*; первое нѣтъ, *the first no*; несносное я, *an insupportable I*.

4. Some nouns, terminating in *a* and *я*, and designating animate beings, with some quality attached, are of the *common* gender (общій), being both masculine and feminine. The following are examples:

бродяга, a vagabond (*man or woman*).обжора, a glutton (*man or woman*).

брюзга, a grumbler.

плакса, a weeper.

ворожей, a fortune-teller.

порѹка, a surety.

выскочка, an upstart.

пустомѣя, a chatterer.

вѣтренца, a volatile person.

пьяница, a drunkard.

гуляка, a lazy person.

разія, a loiterer.

дѡка, a clever fellow.

ровня, a person of the same age.

забѣлка, a squabbler.

рубѡка, a slasher.

зѡйка, a stutterer.

самоѹчка, a self-taught person.

зѡбака, a ninny, a cockney.

святѡша, a bigoted person.

кривошея, a wryneck.

сиротѡ, an orphan.

лѡкомка, a dainty person.

тѣзка, a namesake.

лѡвшѡ, a left-handed person.

убійца, a murderer or murderess.

мотыга, a prodigal person.

ѹмница, a clever person.

невѣжда, an ignorant person.

хвѡжа, a hypocrite.

5. The genders of words signifying relationship, as also the names of animals, are distinguished in various ways. Sometimes by the employment of different words; e. g. отѣць, *the father*, and матъ, *the mother*; сынъ, *the son*, and дочъ, *the daughter*; братъ, *the brother*; and сестрѡ, *the sister*; быкъ, *the bull*, and корѡва, *the cow*; пѣтѹхъ, *the cock*, and кѹрица, *the hen*; барѡнъ, *the ram*, and овцѡ, *the sheep*, &c. Sometimes the same word and the same gender are applied to both sexes; e. g. другъ, *a friend*; врагъ, *an enemy*; товарищъ, *a companion*; дитѡ, *a child (male and female)*; особѡ, *a person*; occasionally the same word is used but with common gender, as has already been said. Usually however masculine nouns, if used to designate feminine objects, change their termination. In these, which are called *movable* nouns (дѡвѣжмѡя), for the masculine ending

are substituted the feminine terminations: *а, я, ка, овка, ица, ица, ница, иня, ша*, and some others, the preceding consonant being at the same time often changed, as is seen in the following examples:

кумъ, godfather; кумá, godmother.
павлинъ, peacock; павá, peahen.
господи́нъ, master; госпожа́, mistress.
тестъ, father-in-law; теща́, mother-in-law.

дуракъ; ду́ра, a fool, *m.* and *f.*
козёлъ, a he-goat; коза́, a she-goat.
гость; госты́я, a guest, *m.* and *f.*
игу́менъ, an abbot; игу́меня, an abbess.

лгу́нь; лгу́нья, a liar, *m.* and *f.*
сосѣдъ; сосѣ́дка, a neighbour. *m.* and *f.*

слуга́, man-servant; -жа́нка, maid-servant.

пасту́хъ, shepherd; -у́шка, shepherdess.

крестья́нинъ; крестья́нка, peasant, *m.* and *f.*

само́ецъ, a male; самка́, a female.

хозя́инъ, host; хозяйка́, hostess.

жидъ, a Jew; жидовка́, a Jewess.

чижъ, siskin; чижёвка́, hen-siskin.

щего́ль, a beau; щего́лиха, a belle.

поваръ, a cook; повариха́, a cook-maid.

шутъ; шутóвка, a buffoon, *m.* and *f.*
левъ, a lion; льви́ца, a lioness.
имперáторъ, emperor; -прáтрица, empress.

жрецъ, priest; жри́ца, priestess.
ка́рла; ка́рлица, a dwarf, *m.* and *f.*
жйтель; жйтельница́, inhabitant, *m.* and *f.*

мона́хъ, a monk; мона́хня, a nun.
кназь, prince; кня́гиня, princess.
геро́й, hero; геро́иня, heroine.

богъ, a god; бо́гиня, a goddess.

графъ, count; гра́финя, countess.

опеку́нъ; опеку́нша, a guardian, *m.* and *f.*

велика́нъ, giant; велика́нша, giantess.
коро́ль, king; коро́лева, queen.

баро́нъ, baron; баро́несса, baroness.

госуда́рь; госуда́рыня, sovereign, *m.* and *f.*

ста́рикъ, an old man; ста́руха, an old woman.

шве́ць, sempster; швей, sempstress.
све́коръ, father-in-law; свекро́вь, mother-in-law.

It remains to be observed that in professional names the Russian language makes a distinction between the name of the wife of a professional man, and the name of a woman who, herself, exercises a profession; e.g. инспект́рица, *inspector's wife*; инспекто́рша, *wife of an inspector*; лека́рка, *a woman who practices medicine*, and лека́рша, *wife of a doctor*; дво́рница, *a female door-keeper*, and дво́рничиха, *wife of a door-keeper*; учи́тельница, *schoolmistress*; and учи́тельша, *wife of a schoolmaster* (from инспекто́ръ, лека́рь, дво́рникъ and учи́тель).

Aspects. 24.—Objects may present themselves to us in different forms, as greater or less, prettier or uglier, than ordinary; and the Russian language has different inflections to express these *aspects*.

1. The *augmentative* nouns (увеличительныя), which terminate in the masculine in *ище*, *ина*; in the neuter in *ище*, and in the feminine in *ища*, represent the object in a magnified form, at the same time adding the idea of ugliness or deformity; e. g. *мужичище*, *a great clownish peasant*; *дурачина*, *a great blockhead*; *лицеище*, *great face*; *лапища*, *a great paw* (from *мужикъ*, *дуракъ*, *лице* and *лапа*).

2. The *diminutive* nouns (уменьшительныя), which present the object diminished in size, end, in the masculine in *икъ*, *окъ*, *екъ*, *ецъ*, *якъ*; in the neuter in *ко*, *це*, and in the feminine in *ка*, *ица*, e. g. *столѣкъ*, *little table*; *червякъ*, *little worm*; *заводець*, *little manufactory*; *деревцо*, *little tree*; *ручка*, *little hand*; *вещица*, *little thing* (from *столъ*, *червь*, *заводъ*, *дерево*, *рука* and *вещь*). From these diminutives others again are formed, as: *столѣчекъ*, *червячекъ*, *ручечка*, *вещичка*.

Besides these diminutives, which lessen the force of the primitives, and which may be termed *physical* diminutives, there are further: a) diminutives of tenderness, friendship, or in one word, of feeling, which terminate in *ушка*, *юшка*, *енька*, as: *батьюшка*, *dear father*; *матушка*, *dear mother*; *маменька*, *dear mamma* (from *батьа*, *мать* and *мама*); and b) diminutives of contempt or slight, presenting the object in an unfavourable point of view; these terminate in *ушко*, *ушка*, *енка*, e. g. *домишко*, *a miserable little house*; *лошадѣнка*, *a miserable little horse*.

Christian names admit also diminutives, both in a favourable and unfavourable sense; thus *Иванъ*,

John; Пётръ, *Peter*; Сергѣй, *Sergius*, become as diminutives of feeling В́ня, Пётя, Серёжа, and as diminutives of contempt В́нька, Пётька, Серёжка. These diminutives, by which the primitive nouns are limited and changed, can only be learned by practice.

The diminutives properly so called, which indicate the smallness of objects, are very commonly employed in Russian, while diminutives of feeling and contempt are seldom used except in familiar language. The same remark applies equally to the augmentatives.

Numbers. 25.—In Russian, as in English, there are two numbers; the *singular* (оди́нственное числѣ), as: столъ, *the table*; кнѣга, *a book*; окнѣ, *the window*; and the *plural* (мно́жественное), as: столы́, *the tables*; кнѣги, *books*; ѣкна, *the windows*.

The Slavonian, like the Greek, has a third number, the *dual* (дво́йственное), which has been retained in certain Russian inflections, as will subsequently be seen.

Some substantives are only used in the *singular*; such are most proper names, and the names of material and abstract objects; e. g. серебрѣ, *silver*; я́сность, *evidence*; любѣвь, *love*. Others are only used in the *plural*; the following are of this class.

Masculine gender.

квасцы́, alum.
люди́, people.
обѣи́, tapestry.
опилки́, saw-dust.
очки́, spectacles.
проѣзды́, post-fare.
пѣльцы́, a sewing-frame.
судки́, a cruet stand.
тиски́, a press.
щипцы́, snuffers.

Neuter gender.

бѣлы́я, white lead.
ворѣта, yard-gate.
дрова́, fire-wood.
крѣсла́, an arm-chair.
перѣла́, a balustrade.
письмена́, letters.
рамена́, shoulders.
уста́, mouth.
чернила́, ink.
чресла́, the loins.

Feminine gender.

бпрѣ́тъки, the needle game.
имянины́, a name-day.
но́жницы, scissors.
о́ковы, fetters, chains.
ѣтруби́, bran.
ро́дины, delivery.
ры́ль, a hurdy-gurdy.
сани́, sledge.
сѣмерки́, dawn.
сѣтки́, day (24 hours).

Some names of towns are only used in the plural; such are: Бѣльцы́, Вязники́, Крестцы́, of the *masculine gender*, and Брѣнницы́, Холмо́горы, and the foreign names: Аѣны́, *Athens*; Я́ссы, *Iassy*; Ёйвы́, *Thebes*, of the *feminine gender*.

26.—The *cases* are different inflections which nouns assume to indicate the mutual relation of objects. The English language has strictly speaking but one case, the genitive; the mutual relation of words being indicated either by a preposition or by the position of words in a phrase. In the Russian language there are seven cases, which may be known, in the names of animate beings, by putting the questions: *кто, кого, кому, кого, чьмъ, о комъ?* and in the names of inanimate objects by the questions: *что, чего, чему, что, чьмъ, о чьмъ?* These are:

1. The *nominative* (именительный падежъ), which gives the name of an object in a phrase in answer to the question *кто* or *что?* e. g.

Кто учится? Ученикъ. Who studies? The scholar.
Что предъ нимъ лежить? What is before him? A book.
 Книга.

2. The *genitive* (родительный), which indicates possession, and which answers to the question *кого* or *чего?* and also *чей, чья, чьё?* In English this case is expressed by the preposition *of*, or by an apostrophic *s*; e. g.

Хозяинъ (чего?) дома. The master (of what?) of the house.
 Домъ (чей?) соседа. The house (of whom?) of the
 neighbour.
 Слушайся (кого?) матери. Obey (whom?) thy mother.

3. The *dative* (дательный), which designates the person or thing to which an object relates, and answers to the question *кому* or *чему?* In English the dative is usually indicated by the preposition *to*; e. g.

Кому́ слѣдуетъ сія награда? To whom does this recompense come? To the scholar.
Ученику́.

Чему́ ты обрадовался? Кни́гу. With what were you delighted?
With a book.

4. The *accusative* (винительный), which commonly called in English grammars the *objective*, answers to the question *кого́* or *что́*? e. g.

Кого́ ты хва́лишь? Ученика́. Whom do you praise? The scholar.
Что́ ты купи́лъ? Кни́гу. What have you bought? A book.

5. The *vocative* (звательный), which expresses the name of the person or object addressed; e. g.

Учени́къ, будь приле́женъ! Scholar, be attentive!
Бо́же, спаси́ Царя́! God, save the Emperor!

6. The *instrumental* (творительный) or *causative*, which designates the means or cause, and answers to the question *къмъ́* or *чѣмъ́*? In English the prepositions *with* and *by* are commonly used for this purpose; e. g.

Къ́мъ́ дово́льны? Ученико́мъ. With whom is one satisfied?
With the scholar.

Чѣ́мъ́ онъ забавля́ется? Кни́- With what does he amuses him-
гою. self? With a book.

7. The *prepositional* (предложный) or *locative*, which answers to the questions *о́ комъ́* or *о́ чѣмъ́*? *въ́ комъ́* or *въ́ чѣмъ́*? &c. This case, which in ecclesiastical Slavonian is called *narrative* (сказательный), is termed in Russian *prepositional*, because it is always accompanied by one of the prepositions *въ́*, *in*; *на́*, *on*; *о́* or *объ́*, *of*; *по́*, *after*; *при́*, *near* *to*; e. g.

О́ комъ́ гово́рятъ? Объ́ уче- Of whom do they speak? Of
ника́. the scholar.

Въ́ чѣ́мъ́ ты нахо́дишь удо́воль- In what do you find pleasure?
ствіе́? Въ́ кни́гу. In a book.

Two of these seven casual inflections, the *nominative* and *vocative*, are called *direct cases* (прямые), because they simply give the name of the object; the remaining five are termed *oblique* (косвенные).

27.—The change of the inflections in nouns, showing the numbers and cases, is called *declension* (склонение), and substantives are divided, according to the manner in which they are declined, into *regular* and *irregular*. Declension of substantives.

28.—Regular substantives, according to their termination, have three declensions: the *first* for nouns with the *masculine termination*, (ъ, и, ѣ); the *second* for those with the *neuter termination* (о, е, я), and the *third* for those with the *feminine termination* (а, я, ѣ). Each of these declensions has three inflections, one *hard*, and two *soft*, as exhibited in the table below. The two following observations relative to this subject are important. Regular substantives.

1. The *vocative* is always like the *nominative*, except in the words Богъ, *God*; Господь, *Lord*; Иисусъ, *Jesus*; Христосъ, *Christ*; Отецъ, *Father*, which, in an invocation of the Deity, preserve the Slavonian inflection; Боже, Господи, Иисусе, Христэ, Отче.

2.—The *accusative, singular* of masculine nouns in the two first declensions, and *plural* in all three, is like the *nominative* when the noun designates an inanimate or abstract object, and like the *genitive* in the names of animate beings.

Masculine nouns, ending in *атель* and *тель*, and designating inanimate agents, such as знаменатель, *the denominator*; дѣлитель, *the divisor* (in arithmetic), are declined like the names of animate beings, and consequently their accusative is like the

genitive. The same is the case with the names of inanimate objects which have been borrowed from animate, as: *спутникъ*, a *satellite* (of a planet). The word *идолъ*, *idol*, has its accusative like the genitive, whilst in its synonyms *кумиръ* and *истуканъ*, the accusative is like the nominative. The word *лице*, signifying *the face* and *an individual*, is used in both its meanings like the name of an inanimate object, its accusative being always the same as the nominative.

The collective nouns are always declined like the names of inanimate objects, though signifying a collection of animate beings, such as *народъ*, a *nation*; *войско*, an *army*; *стадо*, a *herd*.

| DECLENSIONS OF REGULAR SUBSTANTIVES. | | | | | | | | | | | |
|--------------------------------------|-------|---|-------|-----|-----------------------|------------|-------|-----------------------|-----------|--------|---|
| SINGULAR | CASES | FIRST. | | | SECOND. | | | THIRD. | | | |
| | | MASC. TERMINATION. | | | NEUTER TERMINATION. | | | FEM. TERMINATION. | | | |
| | | Hard infl. Soft infl. | | | Hard infl. Soft infl. | | | Hard infl. Soft infl. | | | |
| | | N. | G. | D. | N. | G. | D. | N. | G. | D. | |
| SINGULAR | N. | ъ | й | ь | о | е | мя | а | я | ь | |
| | G. | а | я | я | а | я | ени | ы | и | и | |
| | D. | у | ю | ю | у | ю | ени | ѣ | ѣ (и) | и | |
| | A. | ... like the <i>Nominative</i> or the <i>Genitive</i> ... | | | | | | | у | ю | ь |
| | V. | ... like the <i>Nominative</i> ... | | | | | | | | | |
| | P. | омъ | емъ | емъ | омъ | емъ | енемъ | ою (ой) | ею (ей) | ю (ью) | |
| PLURAL | N. | ѣ | ѣ (и) | ѣ | ѣ | ѣ (и) | ени | ѣ | ѣ (и) | и | |
| | G. | ы | и | и | а | я | мена | ы | и | и | |
| | D. | овъ (ей) | евъ | ей | ѣ | ей (ѣ, ѣй) | енъ | ѣ (ей) | ѣ (ѣ, ѣй) | ей | |
| | A. | амъ | якъ | якъ | амъ | якъ | енамъ | амъ | якъ | якъ | |
| | V. | ... like the <i>Nominative</i> or the <i>Genitive</i> ... | | | | | | | | | |
| | P. | амн | ямн | ямн | амн | ямн | енамн | амн | ямн | ямн | |
| PLURAL | N. | ахъ | якъ | якъ | ахъ | якъ | енахъ | ахъ | якъ | якъ | |
| | G. | ахъ | якъ | якъ | ахъ | якъ | енахъ | ахъ | якъ | якъ | |
| | D. | ахъ | якъ | якъ | ахъ | якъ | енахъ | ахъ | якъ | якъ | |
| | V. | ахъ | якъ | якъ | ахъ | якъ | енахъ | ахъ | якъ | якъ | |
| | A. | ахъ | якъ | якъ | ахъ | якъ | енахъ | ахъ | якъ | якъ | |
| | P. | ахъ | якъ | якъ | ахъ | якъ | енахъ | ахъ | якъ | якъ | |

Rules of the declensions.

29.—In declining the regular nouns, certain rules are to be observed, some of which are *general*, being common to all the three declensions, while others are *special*, being confined to one of the declensions or one of the inflections.

General
rules.

1. According to what has already been observed (§ 18) relative to the permutation of letters, *a*) the vowel *u*, of the *genitive singular* and *nominative plural*, is changed for *u* after the guttural and hissing consonants (*г, к, х; ж, ч, ш, щ*); *b*) the vowel *o*, when without accent, of the *instrumental singular* and *genitive plural*, is changed for *e* after the lingual and hissing consonants (*л; ж, ч, ш, щ*), observing however that after the lingual (*л*) the vowel *o* may be used if it is accented; *c*) the vowel *o* of the *dative* and *prepositional singular* is changed for *u* after the vowel *i* (in nouns in *iŭ, ie* and *iŋ*). (See the paradigms 2, 3, 8, 16, 20, 21, 26).

2. A great number of nouns elide in the *other cases* (excepting in the *instrumental singular* of feminine nouns in *b*) the vowel *e* or *o*, inserted in the termination of the *nominative singular*; but we must observe that in this elision the vowel *e* is changed for *ь* after the consonant *л*, and for *ŭ* after a vowel. (See paradigms 2, 4, 10, 28).

3. In such nouns of the II and III declension as have two consonants before the final vowel, the vowel *o* or *e* is usually inserted between the two consonants in the *genitive plural*; in such cases however the *e* is always substituted for the semi-vowels *ь* and *ŭ*. (See paradigms 12, 13, 20, 23).

4. The *genitive plural* has some particular inflections: the inflection *ѣŭ* (instead of *оѣŭ* and *ѣ*) is peculiar to nouns in *ѡѣŭ, ѡѣŭ, ѡѣŭ, ѡѣŭ*, to those in *ѡѣŭ, ѡѣŭ, ѡѣŭ*, preceded by another consonant, and to those in *ѣѣŭ* and in *ѣѣŭ*; the inflection *ŭ* to nouns in *ѣѣŭ* and *ѣѣŭ* preceded by a vowel, and the inflection *iŭ* to nouns in *ѣѣŭ* and *ѣѣŭ*, contracted from *ie* and *iŋ*. (See paradigms 3, 16, 21, 24, 25, 26).

5. Such nouns as are only used in the *plural*, are declined according to the paradigm to which, by their termination, they belong. Thus among the *masculine* nouns, *хорóмы*, *edifice*, is declined according to the 1st paradigm (*закóны*); *щипцы*, *snuffers*, according to the 2d (*отцы*); *обои*, *tapestry*, according to the 6th (*герóи*); *люди*, *men* (*instr. людѣмѣ*), according to the 9th (*хорóмѣ*); among the *neuter* nouns, *дрóвѣ*, *firewood*, according to the 11th (*словѣ*); *крѣсла*, *arm-chair* (*gen. крѣселѣ*), according to the 12th (*стѣкла*); *письменѣ*, *letters*, according to the 18th (*временѣ*); among the *feminine* nouns, *окóвы*, *chains*, according

to the 19th (коробы); носилки, *a hand-barrow* (gen. носилокъ), according to the 20th (пѣлки); сани, *a sledge*, and рыльѣ, *a hurdy-gurdy*, according to the 27th (страсть).

6. *Foreign nouns*, whether common or proper, ending in *ъ*, *й*, *ь*; *а*, *я*, *о*, are declined like Russian nouns with the same terminations, whilst those in *е*, *и*, *о*, *у* and *ю*, are indeclinable. The same is the case with family names of females, whatever may be their termination. Thus *омнибусъ*, *an omnibus*; Лондонъ, *London*, are declined according to the 1st paradigm (законъ); конвой, *a convoy*; Барклай, *Barclay*, according to the 6th (герой); вѣдевиль, *a vaudeville*; Брюссель, *Bruxelles*, according to the 19th (король); пиеса, *a piece*, (of music, &c.); Петръ, *Petrarch*, according to the 19th (корова); колонія, *a colony*, according to the 26th (молнія); гавань *f. a haven*, according to the 27th (страсть). But кофе, *coffee*; колибри, *a humming-bird*; депо, *depot* (military); рандеву, *a rendez-vous*; ревью, *a review*; Кастельре, *Castlereagh*; Морё, *Morau*, are indeclinable. The same is the case with the feminine family names; as Жанлисъ, Сталь, &c.; thus we say: у Госпожи Жанлисъ, *at the house of Mrs Genlis*; сочиненіе Госпожи Сталь, *the work of Mrs Staël*.

Special
rules.

1. Nouns ending in *енокъ*, signifying the young ones of animals, are masculine in the singular; but in the plural they preserve the Slavonian inflection *ята* or *ата*, and are neuter. (See paradigm 4).

2. Nouns ending in *янинъ* or *анинъ* and in *яринъ* or *аринъ*, have peculiar inflections in the plural. (See paradigm 5).

3. In the *instrumental singular* of the III declension, *ою* is contracted in *оу*, *ею* in *ей*, and *ию* in *юу*; thus we say: рукою or рукѡй, *with the hand*; землёю or землѣй, *by the earth*. (See paradigm 28). In the same manner the *instrumental plural* ями of some nouns in *ь* is contracted in *ьми*, the accent being in such cases placed on the last syllable; thus we say: людьми, *with men*; дверьми, *by gates*; лошадьми, *with horses* (and not людѣми, дверѣми, лошадеѣми).

4. The *genitive singular* of masculine nouns in *ъ*, *ь*, *й*, signifying divisible matter, often takes, especially in familiar language, the inflection *у* and *ю* of the dative (instead of *а* and *я*); thus we say: фунтъ сахара, *a pound of sugar*; ложка дѣгтю, *a spoonful of tar*; чашка чаю, *a cup of tea*. The same

inflection (instead of *н*) is also found in the *prepositional singular*, accompanied with the preposition *въ* or *на*, in some nouns in *з* and *щ*, and in such cases takes the tonic accent; thus we say: *въ саду́*, in the garden; *на краю́*, on the brink.

5. In *compound substantives*, the first word is also declined, if in its junction with the second it has preserved the termination of its nominative singular; thus *Ца́рьгра́дъ*, *Constantinople*, is declined according to the 9th and the 1st paradigm: *Г. Ца́рьгра́да*, *Д. Ца́рюгра́ду*, *И. Ца́ремъгра́домъ*, *Р. о Ца́рьгра́дъ*. With respect to the names of towns compounded of the adjectives *новъ* and *большъ*, as *Ново́городъ*, *Большо́еозеро*, and to the common nouns formed of the numeral *полъ*, the half: as: *полднѣнь*, *midday*; *полгода*, *half a year*, we refer the student to our remarks on that subject in the declension of the adjectives and numerals.

30.—By observing the above general and special rules we shall be able to decline all the regular nouns of the Russian language according to the following 28 paradigms.

According to the 1st paradigm (зако́нъ) are declined nouns in *з* (with the exception of those which belong to the 4 following paradigms), remembering however to change *и* into *у* after the gutturals (*г, к, х*), and *о* into *е* after the lingual (*ц*), and observing further, that several nouns of the 1st declension throw the accent on the inflections of the cases, some commencing with the genitive singular, others with the nominative plural, and others again with the genitive plural. Such are:

| | |
|--------------------------------------|---|
| Ба́ража, the ram. <i>Г. бара́на.</i> | Да́ръ, the gift. <i>Г. дара́; Н. пл. дары́.</i> |
| Верте́пъ, the cavern, верте́па. | До́лга, the debt, дол́га; дол́ги. |
| Ку́мира, an idol, ку́мира. | Ча́нь, a rank, ча́на; чини́й. |
| Волхв́ъ, the magician, волхв́а. | Ша́ръ, a ball, ша́ра; шары́. |
| Враѓъ, the enemy, враѓа. | Бо́гъ, a god; <i>Н. пл. бо́ги, Г. богóвъ.</i> |
| Язы́къ, the tongue, язы́ка. | Воръ́, a robber; во́ры, ворóвъ. |
| Пя́тухъ, a cock, пята́. | Гро́бъ, a coffin; грóбы, гробóвъ. |
| Мѣся́цъ, a month, мѣсяца́. | Дубъ́, an oak; ду́бы, дубóвъ. |
| Ку́знецъ, the blacksmith, кузнеца́. | Волќъ, the wolf; во́лки, волко́въ. |

According to the 2d paradigm (оте́цъ) are declined the nouns in which the vowel *е* or *о* of the nominative is elided in the other cases, observing at the same time the change of *е* into *ь* after the consonant *л*, and into *й* after a vowel. Such are:

| PARADIGMS OF THE THREE DECLENSIONS | | | | | | |
|------------------------------------|---------------|-----|--------------------------------|------------------|-------------|---------------|
| S I N G U | | | | | | |
| DECLENSIONS: | TERMINATIONS: | | <i>Nominat. and Vocat.</i> | <i>Genitive.</i> | <i>Dat.</i> | <i>Accus.</i> |
| FIRST. | Ъ | 1. | закѡнъ, the law . . . | закѡн-а . . . | у . . . | у . . . |
| | | 2. | отѣцъ, the father . . . | отц-а . . . | у . . . | у . . . |
| | | 3. | шалашъ, a cabin . . . | шалаш-а . . . | у . . . | у . . . |
| | | 4. | телѣнокъ, a calf . . . | телѣнк-а . . . | у . . . | у . . . |
| | | 5. | дворянинъ, a gentleman . . . | дворян-и-а . . . | у . . . | у . . . |
| | И | 6. | герѡй, the hero . . . | герѡ-я . . . | ю . . . | ю . . . |
| | | 7. | соловей, a nightingale . . . | солов-ѣй . . . | ю . . . | ю . . . |
| | | 8. | гѣнiй, a genius . . . | гѣн-я . . . | ю . . . | ю . . . |
| | Ь | 9. | корѡль, the king . . . | корѡл-я . . . | ю . . . | ю . . . |
| | | 10. | огѡнь, the fire . . . | огн-я . . . | ю . . . | ю . . . |
| SECOND. | О | 11. | слѡво, a word . . . | слѡв-а . . . | у . . . | у . . . |
| | | 12. | стеклѡ, the glass . . . | стекл-а . . . | у . . . | у . . . |
| | | 13. | колѣчко, small ring . . . | колѣчк-а . . . | у . . . | у . . . |
| | | 14. | мѡре, the sea . . . | мѡр-я . . . | ю . . . | ю . . . |
| | Е | 15. | ружѣ, a gun . . . | руж-ѣя . . . | ю . . . | ю . . . |
| | | 16. | мнѣнiе, an opinion . . . | мнѣн-я . . . | ю . . . | ю . . . |
| | | 17. | дѣтище, n. a great child . . . | дѣтищ-а . . . | у . . . | у . . . |
| | МЯ | 18. | врѣмя, the time . . . | врѣм-ени . . . | ени . . . | ени . . . |
| THIRD. | А | 19. | кѡрѡва, a cow . . . | кѡрѡв-ы . . . | ѣ . . . | у . . . |
| | | 20. | пѣлка, a stick . . . | пѣлк-и . . . | ѣ . . . | у . . . |
| | | 21. | возжѣ, a bridle . . . | возж-и . . . | ѣ . . . | у . . . |
| | И | 22. | недѣля, the week . . . | недѣл-и . . . | ѣ . . . | ю . . . |
| | | 23. | пѣсня, a song . . . | пѣсн-и . . . | ѣ . . . | ю . . . |
| | | 24. | свѣя, a pile . . . | свѣ-и . . . | ѣ . . . | ю . . . |
| | | 25. | судѣя, the judge . . . | суд-ѣй . . . | ѣ . . . | ю . . . |
| | | 26. | мѡлнiя, a lightning . . . | мѡлн-и . . . | и . . . | ю . . . |
| | Ь | 27. | страсть, a passion . . . | страст-и . . . | и . . . | ѣ . . . |
| | | 28. | ложь, the lie . . . | лж-и . . . | и . . . | лжѣ |

With respect to the use of the *tonic accent* in the declensions, the following rules are to be observed.

1. Nouns of the 1st declension commonly preserve through all the cases both of the singular and plural, the accent of the nominative singular. But most polysyllabic nouns, the termination of which is accented, transfer the accent to the inflection of the genitive, and keep it on this syllable through all the other cases. Several monosyllables follow the same rule. Other monosyllables preserve the nominative accent in the singular, but in the plural they transfer it to the inflections of the cases, some in all the cases, others from the genitive downwards.

2. In the 2d declension, the accent serves to distinguish the nominative plural from the genitive singular. On this account, those nouns which in

SIONS OF REGULAR SUBSTANTIVES.

| L A R. | | | P L U R A L. | | |
|-----------------------|------------------|----------------------|--|---|--|
| <i>Instrum. Prep.</i> | | | <i>Nom. and Voc. Genitive. Dative. Accus. Instrum. Prepos.</i> | | |
| о́мъ . . ѣ . . | зако́н-ы . . . | о́въ . . амъ . . | ами . . ахъ . | {the Nominative, in the names of inanimate beings. the Genitive, in the names of animate beings. like } | |
| ѣмъ . . ѣ . . | отцѣ́-и . . . | ѣвъ . . амъ . . | ами . . ахъ . | | |
| ѣмъ . . ѣ . . | шала́ш-и . . . | ѣи . . амъ . . | ами . . ахъ . | | |
| о́мъ . . ѣ . . | те́лѣт-а . . . | ъ . . амъ . . | ами . . ахъ . | | |
| о́мъ . . ѣ . . | дво́рап-е . . . | ъ . . амъ . . | ами . . ахъ . | | |
| ѣмъ . . ѣ . . | геро́-и . . . | евъ . . ямъ . . | ями . . яхъ . | | |
| ѣ́емъ . . ѣ ѣ . . | соловѣ́-и . . . | ѣевъ . . ѣамъ . . | ѣями . . ѣяхъ . | | |
| ѣмъ . . и . . | гѣ́и-и . . . | евъ . . ямъ . . | ями . . яхъ . | | |
| ѣмъ . . ѣ . . | коро́-и-и . . . | ѣи . . ямъ . . | ями . . яхъ . | | |
| ѣмъ . . ѣ . . | огнѣ́-и . . . | ѣи . . ямъ . . | ями . . яхъ . | | |
| о́мъ . . ѣ . . | сло́в-а . . . | ъ . . амъ . . | ами . . ахъ . | | |
| о́мъ . . ѣ . . | сте́кл-а . . . | сте́кол-ъ . амъ . . | ами . . ахъ . | | |
| о́мъ . . ѣ . . | колѣ́чк-и . . . | колѣ́чек-ъ . амъ . . | ами . . ахъ . | | |
| ѣмъ . . ѣ . . | морѣ́-и . . . | ѣи . . ямъ . . | ями . . яхъ . | | |
| ѣ́емъ . . ѣ ѣ . . | ру́жѣ-я . . . | ѣи . . ѣамъ . . | ѣями . . ѣяхъ . | | |
| ѣмъ . . и . . | мнѣ́и-я . . . | и . . ямъ . . | ями . . яхъ . | | |
| ѣмъ . . ѣ . . | дѣ́тщѣ-и . . . | ъ . . амъ . . | ами . . ахъ . | | |
| ѣ́немъ . . ени . . | вре́м-енѣ́ . . . | ѣвъ . . ена́мъ . . | е́нами . . ена́хъ . | | |
| о́ю . . ѣ . . | коро́-и . . . | ъ . . амъ . . | ами . . ахъ . | {the Nominative, in the names of inanimate beings. the Genitive, in the names of animate beings. like } | |
| о́ю . . ѣ . . | па́лк-и . . . | па́лок-ъ . амъ . . | ами . . ахъ . | | |
| ѣ́ю . . ѣ . . | во́зж-и . . . | ѣи . . амъ . . | ами . . ахъ . | | |
| ѣ́ю . . ѣ . . | недѣ́л-и . . . | ъ . . ямъ . . | ями . . яхъ . | | |
| ѣ́ю . . ѣ . . | пѣ́сн-и . . . | пѣ́сен-ъ . ямъ . . | ями . . ахъ . | | |
| ѣ́ю . . ѣ . . | сва́-и . . . | и . . амъ . . | ями . . яхъ . | | |
| ѣ́ю . . ѣ ѣ . . | су́дѣ-и . . . | ѣи . . ѣамъ . . | ѣями . . ѣяхъ . | | |
| ѣ́ю . . и . . | мо́лѣ-и . . . | и . . ямъ . . | ями . . яхъ . | | |
| ѣ́ю . . и . . | стра́ст-и . . . | ѣи . . ямъ . . | ями . . яхъ . | | |
| лѣ́жью . . лжи . . | лж-и . . . | ѣи . . амъ . . | ами . . ахъ . | | |

singular have the accent on the first syllable, transfer it in the plural to the last; while, on the contrary, those which in the singular have the accent on the last syllable, transfer it in the plural to the first, and keep it on that syllable through all the cases, both of the singular and plural.

3. In the III^d declension a distinction between the genitive singular and nominative plural only takes place in such nouns in *a* and *я*, as have the accent on the termination. These nouns transfer the accent to the first syllable in the nominative plural, resuming in all the other cases the accent of the singular. Some of these nouns have also in the accusative singular the accent on the first syllable. Among the nouns in *ъ*, there are several which transfer the accent to the inflections on the cases, from the genitive plural downwards.—The examples to these different rules here follow.

Орѣлъ, an eagle, *О. орѣла*.
 Ковѣръ, a carpet, *ковра*.
 Крючѣкъ, a hook, *крючка*.
 Левъ, a lion, *льва*.
 Кулѣкъ, a sack, *кулька*.
 Илемъ, the elm-tree, *ильма*.
 Конѣкъ, a skate, *конька*.
 Боецъ, a wrestler, *бойца*.
 Заяцъ (and зайца), a hare, *зайца*.
 Опоѣкъ, a calf's skin, *опойка*.

Барѣръ, a hook, *О. барра*.
 Посѣлъ, an ambassador, *посѣла*.
 Лобъ, the forehead, *лоба*.
 Псалѣмъ, a psalm, *псалма*.
 Ротъ, the mouth, *рта*.
 Учѣстокъ, a portion, *учѣстка*.
 Сонъ, sleep, *сна*.
 Уголъ, an angle, *угла*.
 Замокъ, a castle, *зѣмка*.
 Замѣкъ, a lock, *замка*.

According to the 3d paradigm (*шалаши*) are declined such nouns in *ъ* with a hissing consonant (*ж, ч, ш, щ*), as form the *genitive plural* in *ей*; such are:

Надѣжъ, the case, *О. надежа*.
 Платѣжъ, the payment, *платежа*.
 Моржъ, a walrus, *моржа*.
 Ежъ, a hedgehog, *ежа*.
 Ключъ, the key, *ключа*.
 Лучъ, a ray, *луча*.
 Кирпичъ, a brick, *кирпича*.
 Мечъ, a sword, *меча*.

Палашиъ, the sabre, *О. палаша*.
 Ландишиъ, the mayflower, *ландиша*.
 Карандашиъ, a pencil, *карандаша*.
 Торгашъ, the mercer, *торгаша*.
 Плащъ, a mantle, *плаща*.
 Лѣщъ, the bream, *лещи*.
 Товарищъ, a comrade, *товарища*.
 Овошъ, a fruit, *овоща*.

According to the 4th paradigm (*теленѣнокъ*) are declined the names of the young of animals, ending in *ѣнокъ*, which, having retained in the plural the Slavonian inflection *ята* (or *ата* after *ю* and *у*), are neuter and consequently belong, in the singular to the 1st declension, and in the plural to the 2d. Some of these nouns however form their plural regularly in *енки*. Such are:

Ягнѣнокъ, a lamb; *Я. ягнѣята*.
 Жеребѣнокъ, a foal; *жеребѣята*.
 Цыплѣнокъ, a pullet; *цыплѣята*.
 Поросѣнокъ, a little pig; *поросѣята*.
 Котѣнокъ, a kitten; *котѣята*.
 Ребѣнокъ, a child; *ребѣята*.

Ослѣнокъ, a young ass; *Я. ослѣята*.
 Волчѣнокъ, a wolf's cub; *волчѣята*.
 Медвѣжѣнокъ, a bear's cub; *медвѣжѣята*.
 Львѣнокъ, a lion's whelp; *Я. львѣнки*.
 Галчѣнокъ, a young awl; *галчѣнки*.
 Мышѣнокъ, a young mouse; *мышѣнки*.

Also *щенѣнокъ*, a *рир*, *О. щенка*, *Я. щенѣята* and *щенки*.

According to the 5th paradigm (*дворянинъ*) are declined nouns in *инъ*, *анинъ*, *яринъ* and *аринъ*, which in the *plural* change *инъ* into *е, ѣ, амѣ*, &c.; such are:

Селянинъ, a villager; *Я. селяне*. Мирянинъ, a layman; *Я. миряне*.
 Крестянинъ, a peasant; *крестяне*. Поселянинъ, a husbandman; *поселяне*.

| | |
|---|--|
| Семьянинъ, the head of a family; <i>N. pl.</i> семьяне. | Огнѣшанинъ, a freeman; <i>N. pl.</i> огнѣшане. |
| Россiанинъ, a Russian; Россiяне. | Христiанинъ, a Christian; христiане. |
| Гражданинъ, a citizen; граждaне. | Бойринъ, a lord; бойре. |
| Мѣщанинъ, a burgher; мѣщaне. | Българинъ, a Bulgarian; Българе. |

According to the 6th paradigm (герои) are declined the nouns in *й*, with the exception of those in *йѣ* and of some in *ей*, which belong to the two following paradigms. Such are:

| | |
|---|--|
| Покѣй, a room, <i>G.</i> покѣа. | Лишай, a scab, <i>G.</i> лишай. |
| Злодѣй, a wretch, злодѣа. | Най, a part, най. |
| Казначей, a treasurer, казначѣа; <i>N. pl.</i> бои. | Бой, the combat, <i>G.</i> боа; <i>N. pl.</i> бои. |
| Сарай, a coach-house, сарая. | Рой, a swarm, роя; рой. |
| Случай, the occasion, случая. | Строй, the rank, строя; строй. |
| Налѣй, a desk, налая. | Чай, the tea, чая; чай. |

According to the 7th paradigm (соловѣи) are declined eight nouns in *ей*, as change the *e* of the nominative into *o* in all the other cases. Some Christian names in *йѣ*, in familiar language, are declined in the same manner. Such are:

| | |
|--|-------------------------------------|
| Воробѣй, a sparrow, <i>G.</i> воробѣа. | Чирей, a furuncle, <i>G.</i> чирѣа. |
| Муравѣй, an ant, муравѣа. | Василѣй, Basil, Василѣа. |
| Ручѣй, a brook, ручѣа. | Григорѣй, Gregory, Григорѣа. |
| Репѣй, a little ribbon, репѣа. | Левонтѣй, Leontius, Левонтѣа. |
| Улей, a bee-hive, ѣлая. | Прокѣй, Procopius, Прокѣа. |
| Жеребей, the lot, жеребѣа. | Игнатѣй, Ignatius, Игнатѣа. |

According to the 8th paradigm (рѣниѣ) are declined such nouns in *йѣ*, as take the inflection *и* (instead of *ю*) in the *prepositional singular*; such are:

| | |
|---------------------------------------|---|
| Викарѣй, a vicar, <i>G.</i> викарѣа. | Виночѣрнѣй, a cup-bearer, <i>G.</i> виночѣрнѣа. |
| Инвентарѣй, an inventory, инвентарѣа. | чѣрнѣа. |
| Комментарѣй, a commentary, -ментарѣа. | Меркурѣй, Mercury, Меркурѣа. |
| | Сѣргѣй, Sergius, Сѣргѣа. |

Some substantives in *й*, as портной, a tailor; кормчий, the pilot, which are only adjectives used as substantives, are declined like the adjectives (§ 40).

According to the 9th paradigm (корѣи) are declined the masculine nouns in *o*, with the exception of those which belong to the following paradigm. Such are:

| | |
|--------------------------------------|---|
| Жѣлудъ, an acorn, <i>G.</i> жѣлудѣа. | Государѣ, a sovereign, <i>G.</i> государѣа. |
| Колѣдѣзъ, a well, колѣдѣзѣа. | Оленѣ, a stag, оленѣа. |
| Учитель, the teacher, учителѣа. | Медвѣдѣ, a bear, медвѣдѣа. |
| Сѣбѣль, a sable, сѣбѣля. | Царѣ, a king, царѣа. |
| Слѣсарѣ, a lock-smith, слѣсарѣа. | Корабѣль, a vessel, корабѣлѣа. |

Фонарь, a lantern, *G.* фонаря. Голубь, a pigeon; голуби, голубей.
 Фитиль, a match, фитиля. Звѣрь, a beast; звѣри, звѣрей.
 Гусь, a goose; *N. pl.* гусей, *G.* гусей. Червь, a worm; черви, червей.

According to the 10th paradigm (огóнь) are declined such masculine nouns in *o*, as elide the vowel *e* or *o* in all the other cases; such are:

| | |
|-----------------------------------|--|
| Камень, a stone, <i>G.</i> камня. | Корень, the root; <i>N. pl.</i> корни, <i>G.</i> корней. |
| Стебель, a stem, стебля. | Угорь, an eel; угри, угрей. |
| Лапоть, a bast shoe, лаптя. | Ноготь, a nail; ногти, ногтей. |
| Ремѣнь, a thong, ремня. | Коготь, a claw; когти, когтей. |
| Кремень, a flint, кремня. | Перстень, a ring; перстни, перстней. |
| Ломоть, a slice, ломтя. | Локоть, the elbow; локти, локтей. |

In the list of masculine nouns in *o*, given in § 23, which elide the vowel *e* or *o* of the nominative, this vowel is printed in *italics*.

Second declension.

According to the 11th paradigm (слóво) are declined the nouns in *o*, and those in *ye*, *же*, *че* and *ше* (with the exception of such as belong to the following paradigm, of the diminutives in *ко* and *ше* and augmentatives in *ше*), observing however the change of *o* into *e* after the hissing consonants and the lingual (ж, ч, ш, ц), and remarking that several nouns of the 11d declension transfer in the plural the accent from the first syllable to the last, and *vice versa*. Such are:

| | |
|--|---|
| Тѣло, the body, <i>G.</i> тѣла; <i>N. pl.</i> тѣла. | Лицѣ, the face, <i>G.</i> лица; <i>N. pl.</i> лица. |
| Стадо, a herd, стада; стада, | Яйцѣ, an egg, яйца; яйца (<i>G.</i> яицъ). |
| Зеркало, a mirror, зеркала; зеркала. | Плечѣ, the shoulder, плеча; плеча. |
| Озеро, a lake, озера; озера. | Ложѣ, the couch, <i>G.</i> and <i>N. pl.</i> ложа. |
| Вино, the wine, вина; вина. | Вѣче, an assembly, вѣча. |
| Село, a village, села; села. | Жилище, a dwelling, жилища. |
| Колесо, a wheel, колеса; колеса. | Зрѣлище, a spectacle, зрѣлища. |
| Долото, a chisel, долота; долота. | Сокровище, a treasure, сокровища. |
| Чадó, <i>n.</i> a child, <i>G.</i> and <i>N. pl.</i> чада. | Гульбище, a promenade, гульбища. |
| Свѣтило, a star, свѣтила. | Училище, a school, училища. |
| Мѣняло, <i>m.</i> a changer, мѣняла. | Кладбище, a cemetery, кладбища. |

According to the 12th paradigm (стеклó) are declined those nouns in *o* and *e*, preceded by two consonants, which usually insert the vowel *e* or *o* in the *genitive plural*, observing at the same time that the nouns in *ye* take the vowel *e*, and that the semi-vowel *o* between the two consonants is changed into *e*. Such are:

| | |
|--|---|
| Рѣбрó, a rib; <i>N. pl.</i> рѣбра, <i>G.</i> рѣберъ. | Щемлó, a vice, <i>N. pl.</i> щемла, <i>G.</i> щемель. |
| Пятнó, a spot; пятна, пятенъ. | Сукнó, cloth; сукна, суконъ. |
| Зернó, a grain; зёрна, зѣренъ. | Окнó, the window; окна, оконъ. |

Брёвна, a beam; *N. pl.* брёвна, *G.* Чисел, a number; *N. pl.* числа, *G.* брёвенъ. чиселъ (and чиселъ).

Письма, a letter; письма, писемъ. Сердце, the heart; сердца, сердецъ.

Полотно, linen; полотна, полотенъ. Кольце, a ring; кольца, колецъ.

Сёдло, a saddle; сѣла, сѣлѣтъ. Крыльце, a step; крыльца, крылецъ.

It is necessary to observe that in nouns in *здо*, *сто*, *ско* and *тео*, the genitive plural is formed without the insertion of any letter; e. g. ГНѢЗДО, a nest; МѢСТО, a place; ВОЙСКО, an army; ЧУВСТВО, the feeling,—*gen. plur.* ГНѢЗДЪ, МѢСТЪ, ВОЙСКЪ, ЧУВСТВЪ.

According to the 13th paradigm (КОЛѢЧКО) are declined the diminutives in *ко* and *це*, which form their *nominative plural* in *и* (for those in *ко*) or in *ы* (for those in *це*), inserting the vowel *e* in the genitive plural. Such are:

Сердечко, little heart; *pl.* сердечки, Донице, little bottom; *pl.* донци,
-дечекъ. [-дечекъ. донецъ.

Мѣстечко, little place; мѣстечки, Дульце, mouth piece; дульцы,

Крылышко, little wing; крылышки, дутецъ.

-лышекъ. Рыльце, little snout; рыльцы, рылецъ.

Домашко, little house; домашки, Полотенце, a towel; полотёнцы,

-машекъ. -тенецъ.

According to the 14th paradigm (МОРЕ) are declined those nouns in *ле* and *ре*, which form their *genitive plural* in *ей*; e. g.

Поле, the field; *G.* поля, *N. pl.* поля, *G.* полей.

Горе, a grief; горя (not used in the *plural*).

According to the 15th paradigm (РУЖЬЁ) are declined those nouns in *е* and in *еѣ*, which change in the *genitive plural*, *еѣ* and *еѣ* into *ей*, and *еѣ*, a contraction of *еѣ*, into *ий*. Such are:

Жилё, a floor; *pl.* жилъя, *G.* жилей. Платье, a coat, *G. pl.* платьей.

Копьё, a lance; копья, копей. Верховье, a spring, верховей.

Питьё, a beverage; питья, питей. Веселье, an enjoyment, веселій.

Лезвё, the edge; лезвья, лезвей. Воскресенье, Sunday, воскресеній.

Острё, the point, edge; острия, острий. Повѣрье, a belief, повѣрій.

The following nouns in *еѣ* form their *genitive plural* in *еѣѣ*:
ПОДМАСТѢРЬЕ *m.*, the journeyman; КУШАНЬЕ, a dish; ПОМѢСТЬЕ, a domain; УСТЬЕ, mouth (of a river); ВАРѢНЬЕ, a preserve.

According to the 16th paradigm (МНѢНІЕ) are declined nouns in *іе*, which form their *genitive plural* in *ий*, and which in the *prepositional singular* take the inflection *и* (instead of *ю*). In

these nouns the accent of the nominative plural is the same as that of the genitive singular. Such are:

| | |
|--|--|
| Здѣніе, an edifice, <i>G. and N. pl.</i> зданія. | Оръжіе, an arm, <i>G. and N. pl.</i> оружія. |
| Знаніе, knowledge, знанія. | Явленіе, an apparition, явленія. [нія. |
| Желаніе, the desire, желанія. | Сообщеніе, a communication, сообще- |
| Повѣніе, an idea, повѣнія. | Сомнѣніе, the doubt, сомнѣнія. |
| Собраніе, an assembly, собранія. | Владѣніе, the possession, владѣнія. |
| Растеніе, a plant, растенія. | Созвѣздіе, a constellation, созвѣздія. |

According to the 17th paradigm (дѣтище) are declined the augmentative nouns, which form their plural in *и, ей, &c.*; e. g.

| | |
|--|---|
| Домѣще, great house; <i>pl.</i> домѣщи. | Століще, great table; <i>pl.</i> столѣщи, -щей. |
| Дворѣще, great court, дворѣщи. | Козліще, <i>m.</i> great he-goat; козліщи. |
| Мужнѣще, <i>m.</i> big peasant; мужнѣчищи. | Поконѣще, great room; поконѣщи. |

Some substantives in *ое*, as *животное, an animal*; *мороженое, ice-creams*, which are only adjectives used as substantives, are declined like the adjectives (§ 40).

According to the 18th paradigm (врѣмя) are declined nouns in *мя*. In the plural the accent is transferred to the last syllable. Such are:

| | |
|---|---|
| Брѣмя, the burden, <i>N. pl.</i> бремена. | Плѣмя, the race, <i>N. pl.</i> племена. |
| Вымя, an udder, вымена. | Стрѣмя, the stirrup, стремѣна. |
| Имя, the name, имена. | Тѣмя, the sinciput, тѣменѣ. |
| Пламя, the flame (<i>no plural</i>). | Знамя, the flag, знаменѣ and знаменѣна. |

By the same paradigm is declined *сѣмя, seed, plur. сѣмена*, which however has retained in the genitive plural the Slavonian inflection *сѣмянъ* (instead of *сѣменъ*), to be distinguished from the proper name *Семѣнь, Simeon*.

Third declension

According to the 19th paradigm (короба) are declined the nouns in *а* (excepting such as belong to the two following paradigms). It is necessary to observe the change of *ы* into *и* after the guttural and hissing consonants (г, к, х; ж, ч, ш), and of *о* into *е* after the hissings and the lingual (ж, ч, ш; ц), and also to remark that several nouns of the III^d declension in *а* and *я* transfer the accent in the nominative plural, and some of them also in the accusative singular, from the last syllable to the first. Such are:

| | |
|---|--|
| Рыба, the fish, <i>G. and N. pl.</i> рыбы. | Звѣзда, a star, <i>G.</i> звѣзды; <i>N. pl.</i> звѣзды. |
| Шляпа, a hat, шляпы. | Жена, the wife, жены; жѣны. |
| Побѣда, victory, побѣды. | Слуга, a servant, слуги; слуги. |
| Рѣза, a rose, рѣзы. | Рѣка, a river, рѣки; рѣки. |
| Книга, a book, книги. | Вода, water, <i>G.</i> воды, <i>A.</i> воду, <i>N. pl.</i> воды. |
| Собака, a dog, собаки. | Зима, winter, зимы, зиму; зимы. |
| Мѣха, a fur, мѣхи. | Рука, the hand, руки, руку; руки. |
| Кожа, the skin, кожи. | Голова, the head, головы, голову; |
| Тѣча, the cloud, тѣчи. | голови. |
| Груша, a pear, груши. | Скворода, a frying pan, сквороду, |
| Вдова, a widow, <i>G.</i> вдовы; <i>N. pl.</i> вдовы. | роды. |

According to the 20th paradigm (пѣлка) are declined most nouns in *a* preceded by two consonants, or by one consonant and *o* or *й*, which insert the vowel *e* or *o* in the *genitive plural*, *o* and *й* then changing into *e*. Such are:

| | |
|--|---|
| Ложка, the spoon, <i>G. pl.</i> ложекъ. | Койма, the hem, <i>G. pl.</i> коёмъ. |
| Сосна, the fir, сосенъ. | Копѣйка, a copeck; копѣекъ. |
| Сказка, a tale; сказокъ. | Рѣйна, a ship's yard; рѣенъ. |
| Шалка, a cup; шалокъ. | Свадьба, the marriage; свадебъ. |
| Утка, a duck; утокъ. | Судьба, fate; <i>N. pl.</i> судьбы, <i>G.</i> судьбъ. |
| Овца, a sheep; <i>A.</i> овецъ, <i>G. pl.</i> овецъ. | Тюрьма, the prison; тюремъ, тюремъ. |
| Доска, a plank; доску, досокъ. | Серьга, an ear-ring; серьги, серьгъ. |

The vowels *o* or *e* are inserted solely to facilitate the pronunciation; for if the two or three consonants in juxta-position can be articulated without difficulty, the insertion does not take place. Thus: просьба, *the demand*; староста, *a bailiff*; верста, *a verst*; жертва, *a victim*, form their *genitive plural*: просьбъ, старостъ, верстъ, жертвъ. The *genitive plural* of война, *war*, is войнъ, and that of тайна, *a sacrament*, is тайнъ.

According to the 21th paradigm (возжѣ) are declined nouns in *жа, ча, ша*, preceded by a consonant, as also those in *ща*, which form their *genitive plural* in *ей*. Such are:

| | |
|---------------------------------------|--|
| Ханжа, a bigot, <i>G. pl.</i> ханжѣй. | Лѣвшѣ, a left-handed person; <i>G. pl.</i> |
| Парча, brocade; парчей. | Вѣкша, a squirrel; вѣкшей. [лѣвшѣй.] |
| Прѣтча, a proverb; прѣтчей. | Рѣща, a grove; рѣщей. |
| Каланча, a belfry; каланчѣй. | Тѣмща, the thickness; тѣмщѣй. |

In the same manner are declined юноша, *young man*, and паша, *a pasha*, *G. pl.* юношей and пашѣй.

According to the 22th paradigm (недѣля) are declined nouns in *я*, preceded by a consonant, which form their *genitive plural*

in *o*, with the exception of some which form it in *ей*, and others in *o* and *ей*. Such are:

Баня, the bath; *G. pl.* бань.
 Пуля, a ball; пуль.
 Буря, a tempest; бурь.
 Гира, a weight; гирь.
 Дыня, a melon; дынь.
 Богиня, a goddess; богинь.
 Пустыня, a desert; пустынь.
 Потёра, a loss; потерь.

Дядя, the uncle; *G. pl.* дядей.
 Бронея, a cuirass; брони.
 Пёна, a fine; пёней.
 Ноздря, a nostril; ноздрей.
 Стёза, a footpath; стёзей.
 Доля, a portion; долей and доль.
 Заря, the dawn; зарей and зарь.
 Тоня, fishing-net; тоней and тонь.

According to the 23th paradigm (нбсна) are declined the nouns in *ля* and *ня*, preceded by another consonant, by *o* or by *й*, which insert in the *genitive plural* the vowel *e* (one single noun takes the vowel *o*), or change *o* and *й* into *e*. Such are:

Сабля, a sabre; *G. pl.* сабель.
 Басня, a fable; басень.
 Башня, a tower; башень.
 Дерёвня, a village; деревень.
 Кровля, a roof; кровель.
 Пётля, a running-knot; пётель.
 Земля, the earth; земель (*A. s. землю*).

Обёдня, the mass; *G. pl.* обёдень.
 Кухня, the kitchen; кухонь.
 Спальня, a dormitory; спальень. [лень.
 Богдья, an almshouse; богдья.
 Швальня, a sewing room; швальень.
 Бйня, a slaughter-house; ббень.
 Водопойня, a horse-pond; водпоень.

The substantive земля takes, in the prepositional singular with *на*, the Slavonian inflection *на землй*, *on the earth*, to be distinguished for *на землй*, *on the ground*.

According to the 24th paradigm (сваъ) are declined those nouns in *я* preceded by a vowel (with the exception of those in *ия*), which form their *genitive plural* in *й*; such are:

Выл, the neck; *G. pl.* вый.
 Лядвей, the hip; лядвей.
 Струй, a current; струй.
 Верей, a post; верей.
 Шей, the neck; шей.
 Змй, a serpent; змй.
 Соя, the jay; сой.
 Сбруй, an armour; сбруй.

The names of foreign towns, ending in *oa* and *ya*, are declined in the same manner, except in the *accusative*, which they form in *y* (and not in *ю*); e. g. Гёнуа, Genoa, *A. Гёнуу*. Мънтуа, Mantua, Мънтуу. Падъа, Padua, Падуу. Гоа, Goa, Гёу.

Some nouns in *ая* and *ня*, as: кладовая, a storehouse; передняя, an antechamber, which are only adjectives used as substantives, are declined like adjectives (§ 40).

According to the 25th paradigm (судьб) are declined the nouns in *бя*, which in the *genitive plural* change this termination into *ей*, and if it is contracted from *ия*, into *йй*. Such are:

Ладьѣ, a boat; *G. пл. ладѣй.*

Скамьи, a bench; *скамѣй.*

Статьѣ, an article; *статѣй.*

Свиньи, a pig; *свинѣй.*

Семьи, the family; *семѣй.*

Гостьѣ, a female guest; *G. пл. гостѣй.*

Лгунья, a female liar; *лгунѣй.*

Свѣтъѣ, a female relation; *свѣтѣй.*

Кѣльѣ, a cell; *кѣлѣй.*

Игуменья, an abbess; *игуменѣй.*

According to the 26th paradigm (мѡнїѣ) are declined the nouns in *їѣ*, which in the *dative* and *prepositional singular* take the inflection *у* (instead of *ѣ*), and which form their *genitive plural* in *їѣ*. Such are:

Арміѣ, an army; *D. армін; G. пл. стѣхїѣ, an element; D. стѣхїн; G. пл. армїѣ.*

Комѣѣ, a comedy; *комѣдїн; комѣдїѣ.*

Лїліѣ, a lily; *лїлїн; лїлїѣ.*

Лїнїѣ, a line; *лїнїн; лїнїѣ.*

Трагѣдїѣ, a tragedy; *трагѣдїн; трагѣдїѣ.*

Витїѣ, an orator; *витїн; витїѣ.*

According to the 27th paradigm (страсть) are declined the feminine nouns in *ѣ*, observing at the same time the change of *ѣ* into *ѣ* after the hissing consonants (ж, ч, ш, щ), and remarking that several of these nouns transfer in the plural the accent to the casual inflections, from the genitive plural downwards. Such are:

Ткань, a tissue; *G. пл. ткѣнѣй.*

Печѣѣ, a seal; *печѣтѣй.*

Кровѣѣ, a bedstead; *кровѣтѣй.*

Ель, a fir; *елѣй.*

Свирѣѣ, a pipe; *свирѣтѣй.*

Ладѡнѣ, the palm of the hand; *ладѡнѣй.*

Осенѣ, the autumn; *осенѣй.*

Мечѣѣ, a mosque; *мечѣтѣй.*

Болѣзнѣ, a malady; *болѣзнѣй.*

Добрѡдѣтѣ, virtue; *добрѡдѣтѣй.*

Бровь, an eyebrow; *N. пл. бровѣй, G. бровѣй.*

Кустъ, a tuft; *кустѣй, кустѣй.*

Вѣтвь, a branch; *вѣтвѣй, вѣтвѣй.*

Дверь, the door; *дверѣй (I. дверѣмї).*

Лошадь, a horse; *лошадѣй (I. дѡмї).*

Плеть, a whip; *плетѣй (I. плетѣмї).*

Ночь, the night; *ночѣй; D. ночѣмъ.*

Печь, a stove; *печѣй; печѣмъ.*

Мышь, a mouse; *мышѣй; мышѣмъ.*

Вещь, a thing; *вещѣй; вещѣмъ.*

According to the 28th paradigm (люжь) are declined five nouns in *ѣ*, which elide the vowel *ѣ* of the nominative in the other cases, except in the instrumental singular; these are:

Вошь, a louse; *G. вшї, I. вшью.*

Рожь, rue; *ржѣ, рѡжю.*

Любѡвь, love; *G. любѡвї, I. любѡвью.*

Цѣрковь, the church; *цѣрквѣ, цѣрквѣю.*

The noun цѣрковь takes, in the *dative*, *instrumental* and *prepositional plural*, the hard inflection *ѣмъ, ѣмї, ѣхъ*: цѣрквѣмъ, цѣрквѣмї, о цѣрквѣхъ. Любѡвь, used as a Christian name, retains the vowel through all the cases, *G. Любѡвї, ѣс.*

Irregular
nouns.

31. — The *irregular* nouns are such as take in some cases an inflection different to what they ought to have, according to the termination of their nominative singular; or such as form their plural in a particular manner.

1. Several nouns in *з* and *б* take in the *nominative plural* the inflection *а, я*, with the tonic accent (instead of *и, у*), while the genitive remains in *овъ, евъ, ей*, and the other cases regular. Such are:

| | |
|---|---|
| Бѣрегъ, the shore, <i>pl.</i> берега, береговъ. | Погребъ, a cellar, <i>pl.</i> погреба, -бавъ. |
| Бокъ, the flank, бока. | Пологъ, a curtain, пологи. |
| Вѣчеръ, the evening, вечера. | Профессоръ, a professor, профессора. |
| Голосъ, the voice, голоса. | Рукавъ, a sleeve, рукава. |
| Городъ, the town, города. | Флюгеръ, a weather-cock, флюгера. |
| Докторъ, a doctor, докторъ. | Шомполъ, a ramrod, шомпола. |
| Жерновъ, a millstone, жернова. | Хлѣвъ, a stall, хлѣва. |
| Катеръ, a cutter, катера. | Холодъ, the cold, холода. |
| Киверъ, a shako, кивера. | Сторожъ, a guard, сторожа, сторожей. |
| Колоколъ, a bell, колокола. | Вексель, a bill of exchange, -ля, -лей. |
| Кучеръ, a coachman, кучера. | Вензель, a monogram, вензеля. |
| Лугъ, a meadow, луга. | Егеръ, a hunter, егеря. |
| Лѣсъ, a forest, лѣса. | Крендель, a cracknel, крендели. |
| Мастеръ, a master, мастера. | Лѣкаръ, a surgeon, лекаря. |
| Мичманъ, a midshipman, мичмана. | Писаръ, a writer, писаря. |
| Островъ, an island, острова. | Флигель, wing of a house, флигеля. |
| Парусъ, a sail, паруса. | Штемпель, a stamp, штемпеля. |
| Поваръ, a cook, повара. | Якоръ, an anchor, якоря. |

In the same manner тетеревъ, a grouse, has in *N.* *pl.* тетерева; but in the genitive тетереваѣ (instead of *тетеребавъ*).

2. Some nouns in *з, б, о*, form their *plural* in *ва, ева, ямаъ*, &c., changing the gutturals *з* and *к* before *в* into *ш* and *ч*. Such are:

| | |
|--|---|
| Братъ, the brother, <i>pl.</i> братья, -евъ. | Прутъ, a twig, <i>pl.</i> прутья, прутьевъ. |
| Брусъ, a beam, брусья. | Полосъ, a slide, полосы. |
| Клинь, a wedge, клинья. | Стулъ, a chair, стулья. |
| Клокъ, a lock, клоchia. | Зять, son-in-law, зятья. |
| Колосъ, an ear, колосья. | Звенъ, a link, звенья. |
| Коль, a stake, кольца. | Крыло, a wing, крылья. |
| Комъ, a heap, комя. | Перъ, a feather, перья. |
| Копыль, a sledge-bar, копылья. | Полѣно, a billet of wood, полѣнья. |
| Кочанъ, a head of cabbage, кочанья. | Помелъ, a malkin, помелья. |
| Лубъ, a sheet of bark, лубья. | Шило, an awl, шилья. |

3. Some nouns in *ъ* have their *genitive plural* like the nominative singular (instead of *овъ*), e. g.

| | |
|--|--|
| Алтынь, three corsecks: <i>pl.</i> алтыны, | Рекрутъ, a recruit: <i>pl.</i> рекруты, рекрутъ. |
| алтынь. | Сапогъ, a boot; сапоги, сапогъ. |
| Аршинъ, an ell; аршинны, аршинъ. | Солдатъ, a soldier; солдаты, солдатъ. |
| Гренадёръ, a grenadier: гренадёры, | Турокъ, a Turk; Турки, Турокъ. |
| -лёръ. | Уланъ, a hulan; уланы, уланъ. |
| Драгунъ, a dragoon; драгуны, дра- | Цыганъ, a gipsy; цыганы, цыганъ. |
| гунъ. | Чулкъ, a stocking; чулки, чулкъ. |
| Пудъ, a pood; пуды, пудъ. | Грузинъ, a Georgian; Грузины, |
| Разъ, a time; разы, разъ. | Грузинъ. |

We can however say regularly пять пудовъ, *five poods*; нѣсколько рекрутовъ, *some recruits*. The substantive человекъ, *man*, has also the genitive plural like the nominative singular, but only in junction with a numeral, as пять человекъ, *five men*; in all other cases it is regular; e. g. друзья человекоевъ, *the friends of the men* — The substantive сажень, *a wise*, has likewise in the genitive plural сажень, the accent being transposed; and день, *the day*, in familiar language, takes the same inflection when in junction with a numeral; e. g. семь дней, *seven days* (instead of семь дней).

4. The following nouns form their *plural* in different ways.

Глазъ, the eye, { have *а, з, амъ*, &c.: глаза, глазъ, глазамъ; волосъ, a hair, { волосъ, волосамъ (and also regularly: волосы).

Баринъ, a lord, { change *инъ* into *а, з, амъ, ами, атъ*: бара, баръ,
Господинъ, master, { барамъ; господъ, господъ, господамъ; Татаръ (and
Татаринъ, a Tartar, { Татары, Татаръ, Татарамъ, &c.

Хозяинъ, a housekeeper, *plur.* хозяйева, хозяйевъ, хозяйевамъ, &c.

Шуринъ, a brother-in-law, *plur.* шурья, шурьевъ, шурьямъ, &c.

Другъ, a friend, { have their plural in *я, ей, ямъ*, &c. (другъ changes
Князь, a prince, { *z* into *з*): друзья, друзей, друзьямъ; князья, князей;
Мужъ, a husband, { мужья, мужей, &c. The latter, in the sense of *man*,
is regular: мужи, мужей, мужамъ, &c.

Кумъ, a godfather. { form their plural in the same way by inserting the
Сватъ, a kinsman, { syllable *овъ*: кумовья, кумовей; сватовья, сватовей;
Сынъ, the son, { сыновья, сыновей, &c. Сынъ, with a *figurative* mean-
ing, is regular: сыны, сыновъ, &c.

Сосѣдъ, a neighbour, { take in the plural the soft inflection *и, ей, ямъ*,
Холопъ, a bondman, { &c.: сосѣди, сосѣдей, сосѣдямъ (and also regular:
Чѣртъ, the devil, { сосѣды, сосѣдовъ); холопи, холопей; чѣрти, чѣртей,
чѣртамъ, &c.

Солнце, the sun, { take the masculine termination: *и, евъ, амъ, ор и*,
Облако, a cloud, { *овъ, амъ*, &c.: солнды, солнцевъ; облака, облаковъ;
Очко, a rip, point { (and also regular: облака, облакъ); очки, очковъ;
Ушко, a handle, { ушки, ушковъ, ушкамъ, &c.

Вѣко, the eyelid, { form their plural in *и, з, амъ*, &c.: вѣки, вѣкъ, вѣкамъ;
Яблоко, an apple, { яблоки, яблокъ (and яблоковъ), яблокамъ, &c.

| | |
|----------------------------------|--|
| Небо, heaven, Чудо, a wonder. | { have in the plural: небеса, небесъ, небесамъ; чудеса, чудесъ, чудесамъ, &c. Небо, in the sense of <i>palace</i> , has no plural, and чудо, signifying <i>a monster</i> , is regular: чуда, чудъ, чудамъ, &c. |
| Око, the eye, Ухо, the ear. | { form their plural in <i>и, ей, амъ</i> , with the permutation of the consonant: очи, очей, очамъ, очамъ; уши, ушей, ушамъ, ушамъ (instead of <i>ушамъ</i>). This inflection is properly the Slavonian dual; the plural, which is sometimes used in poetry, is: очеса, ушеса |
| Дитя, a child, | { which in the singular has preserved the Slavonian declension: <i>G. D. and P. дитяти, I. дитятемъ and дитятею</i> , has in plural: <i>N. дѣти, G. and A. дѣтей, D. дѣтямъ, I. дѣтми, P. о дѣтахъ</i> . |

Курьца, a hen, *plur.* кѹры, кѹръ, кѹрамъ, &c.

Слѣпо, the slaver, *plur.* слѣпши, слѣпѣй, слѣпѣмъ, &c., with the soft inflection.

5. Some nouns have a double inflection in the *plural*, the one regular, the other irregular.

a) Some have two inflections in the nominative only, and without any difference in the meaning of the word; such are:

| | |
|---|---|
| Вѣкъ, an age, <i>pl.</i> вѣки and вѣка, вѣковъ. | Поясъ, girdle, <i>pl.</i> поясы and пояса, -совъ. |
| Годъ, a year, годы and года, годовъ. | Рогъ, a horn, роги and рога, роговъ. |
| Домъ, a house, дома and дома, домовъ. | Снѣгъ, snow, снѣги and снѣга, снѣговъ. |
| Корпусъ, body, корпусы and корпусы, -совъ. | Столъ, a stack, стоги and стогы, стоговъ. |
| Куполовъ, cupola, куполы and купола, -ловъ. | Стругъ, a bark, струги and струга, -говъ. |
| Мѣлъ, honey, мѣды and мѣдъ, медовъ. | Тѣмъ, a room, тѣремы and тѣрема, -мовъ. |
| Окорокъ, a ham, окороки and окорока, -овъ. | Край, the brink, край and край, краевъ. |

b) Others have two inflections through all the cases, the irregular inflection being used where the substantive has a collective meaning; such are:

| |
|--|
| Батога, a stick, <i>pl.</i> батогы, батоговъ, and батожья, батожьевъ, &c. |
| Внукъ, the grandson; внуки, внуковъ, and внучата, внучать, &c. |
| Крюкъ, a hook; крюки, крюковъ, and крючья, крючьевъ. |
| Ободъ, a felloe; ободы, ободовъ, and ободья, ободьевъ. |
| Лоскутъ, a shred; лоскуты, лоскутовъ, and лоскутья, лоскутьевъ. |
| Струпу, a scurf; струпы, струповъ, and струнья, струньевъ. |
| Сукъ, a branch; сѹкы, сѹковъ, and сѹчья, сѹчьевъ. |
| Черепъ, a potsherd; черепы, череповъ, and черепья, черепьевъ. |
| Волдырь, <i>m.</i> a tubercle; волдыри, волдырей, and волдыря, волдырьевъ. |
| Камень, <i>m.</i> a stone; камни, камней, and камѣня, камѣньевъ. |

Корень, *m.* a root: корни, корней, and коренья, кореньевъ.
 Пузырь, *m.* a bladder: пузыри, пузырей, and пузыря, пузырьевъ.
 Пупырь, *m.* a pimple: пупыри, пупырей, and пупыря, пупырьевъ.
 Уголь, *m.* the charcoal: угли, углей, and уголья, угольевъ.
 Дерево, a tree: дерева, деревь, and деревья, деревьевъ.
 Дыра, a hole: дыры, дырь, and дырья, дырьевъ.
 Щель, *f.* a chink: щели, щелей, and щельевъ.

c) Others again have two inflections with totally different meanings; such are:

Зубъ, a tooth (in the mouth), *pl.* зѣбы, зубовъ, and tooth (of a saw), зѣбья, зѣбьевъ.

Капля, a drop (of water), капли, капель, and drops (in medicine), капли, каплей.

Листъ, a leaf (of paper), листы, листовъ, and a leaf (of a tree), листья, листьевъ.

Мужъ, a man, мѣжи, мужей, and a husband, мужья, мужей.

Мѣхъ, a fur, мѣхи, мѣховъ, and a pair of bellows, мѣха, мѣховъ.

Образъ, the form, образы, образовъ, and an image, образа, образовъ.

Поводъ, a motive, поводы, поводовъ, and a vein, поводи, поводиевъ.

Судно, a vessel (utensil), судны, суденъ, and a vessel (ship), суда, судовъ.

Хлѣбъ, a bread, хлѣбы, хлѣбовъ, and a corn, хлѣба, хлѣбовъ.

Цветъ, a flower, цветы, цветовъ, and a colour, цвета, цветовъ.

d) Lastly there is one substantive which in the plural has three inflections, a different meaning being conveyed by each; viz.

Колѣно, { a tribe, *pl.* колѣна, колѣтъ, колѣнамъ, &c.
 the knee, *pl.* колѣни, колѣней, колѣнямъ, &c.
 a joint (of a plant), *pl.* колѣнья, колѣньевъ, колѣньямъ, &c.

6. The declension of the following nouns is quite irregular:

Господь, the Lord, { is declined like a noun in *ъ*, with the hard inflection:
G. Господа, *D.* Господу, *I.* Господомъ; the *vocative*
 is: Господи.

Христосъ, Christ, { cuts off in all the other cases the syllable *ос*: *G.* Христѣ,
D. Христѣ, *I.* Христомъ, *P.* о Христѣ, *V.* Христѣ.

Дочь, a daughter, { insert in the inflections of the cases the syllable *ер*:
G. and *D.* дочери and матери, *I.* дочерью and матерью;
 Мать, the mother, { *plur. N.* дочери and матери, *G.* дочерей and матерей,
I. дочерями and матерями, &c.

Пламень, flame, { although masculine, take in the *genitive*, *dative* and
 Путь, the way, { *prepositional* singular the feminine inflection *и*: пламени,
 пути; but the instrumental case is regular (пламенемъ,
 путемъ).

EXERCISES IN THE DECLENSION OF SUBSTANTIVES.

Nominative The master of the garden and the mistress of the house.
and
Genitive. Хозяинъ садъ и хозяйка домъ.

The garden of the master and the house of the mistress.
Садъ хозяинъ и домъ хозяйка.

The roaring of the lions; the song of the nightingale; the
Рыканіе левъ; пѣніе соловѣй;

bellowing of the bull, of the ox and of the cow; the neighing
мычаніе быкъ, волъ и корова; ржаніе

of the horses; the barking of the dog; the cooing of the pigeons;
лошадь f; лай собака; воркованіе голубъ m;

the cawing of the crows; the croaking of the frogs; the howling
карканіе воронъ; кваканіе лягушка; вой

of the wolf; the buzzing of the bees, of the cock-chafers and
волокъ; жужжаніе пчела, жукъ и

of the flies; the bleating of the rams and of the ewes. A chimney
муха; блеяніе баранъ и овца. Каминъ

without fire; windows without panes; groats without butter;
безъ огонь m; окно безъ стекло; каша безъ масло;

saddles without stirrups; a charge without ball; islands and
седло безъ стрѣмя; зарядъ безъ пуля; островъ и

meadows without trees; cooks, coachmen and labourers without
лугъ безъ дерево; поваръ, кучеръ и работникъ безъ

work; children without mother; soldiers without muskets;
работа; дитя безъ мать; солдатъ безъ ружьё;

muskets without flints; a statue without arms and without
ружьё безъ кремѣнь m; статуя безъ рука и безъ

ears; young bears and young lions without hair; vessels
ухо; медвѣженокъ и львенокъ безъ шерсть f; корабль m

without hammocks; ships without oars; tea without sugar and
безъ койка; судно безъ весло; чай безъ сахаръ и

without cream. A bunch of pens; a dozen of cups, of plates
безъ сливокъ *f*. Пукъ перо; дюжина чашка, тарелка

and of glasses; five scores of trouts; half a score of melons;
и стаканы; сотня форель *f*; десяток дыня;

a quantity of geese, of ducks and of swans; herds of cattle;
множество гусь *m*, утка и лебедь *m*; стадо скотъ;

studs of horses. The men of antiquity, and the husbands
табуны лошадей *f*. Мужъ древность и мужъ

of the wives. The flowers of the gardens and the colours
женъ. Цветъ садъ и цветъ

of the rainbow. The leaves of paper and the leaves of the trees.
радуга. Листъ бумага и листъ дерево.

The teeth of the mouth and the teeth of a comb. The tribes
Зубъ во (*prep.*) ротъ и зубъ у гребень *m*. Колѣно

of the Israelites, the knees of a man, and the joints of plants.
Израильянинъ, колѣно у человѣкъ, и колѣно растеніе.

The taking of herrings on the coasts of America has been very
Ловъ сельдь *f* у берегъ Америка былъ очень

profitable to the English, the Swedes, the Dutch and
выгоденъ для (*gen.*) Англичанинъ, Шведъ, Голландецъ и

the French.

Французъ.

Advice to friends. Glory to God. Woe to the enemies. Nominative
Советъ другъ. Слава Богъ. Горе врагъ. and Dative.

The general order to the troops. Obedience to the laws. Give
Приказъ войско. Повиновеніе законъ. Дай

food to the geese, to the hens, to the pigeons and to the
ѣсть гусь *m*, курица, голубъ *m* и

little dogs. To act conformably to the laws of honour.
щенокъ. Поступать соотвѣтственно правило честь.

To live according to his situation. A law given as well
Жить прилично состояніе. Законъ, данный какъ

for the nobles as for the citizens. To be against the wishes
 дворянинъ, такъ и мѣщанинъ. Противиться желаніе
 of the children, and the desire of the parents. The books,
 дитя, и воля родитель. Книга,
 the pens and the papers belong to the scholars, and not
 перо и тетрадь принадлежатъ ученикъ, а не
 to the masters. The fields and the meadows belong to the
 учитель. Поле и лугъ принадлежатъ
 father and to the mother, and the gardens, as well as the forests
 отецъ и мать, а садъ, какъ и лѣсъ,
 to the sons and to the daughters. To be agreeable to the men
 сынъ и дочь. Правиться мужина
 and to be disagreeable to the women. The verdure is agreeable
 и не правиться женщина. Зелень нравится
 to the eyes. The pictures please the sisters and the flowers
 глазъ. Картина нравятся сестра, а цвѣтъ
 the brothers. Useful to the country; agreeable to God and
 братъ. Пользныи отечество; пріятныи Богъ и
 to men; faithful to the sovereign; dear to friends; agreeable
 люди; вѣрный государь; любезныи другъ; милыи
 to children. Man is known by his face, by his voice, by
 дитя. Человѣкъ узнаётся по лицѣ, по голосъ, по
 his figure, by his walk and by the motions of his body. Tourists
 ростъ, по походка и по тѣлодвиженіе. Туристъ
 travel in Switzerland, in France, in Italy, in Germany,
 путешествуютъ по Швейцарія, Франція, Италія, Германія,
 in America and in Egypt.
 Америка а Египеть.

| | |
|-------------|--|
| Nominative | The brothers have bought houses, gardens, a village and |
| and | |
| Accusative. | Братъ купили домъ, садъ, деревня и |
| | fields, and have sold oxen, cows, horses and a carriage. |
| | поле, а продали быкъ, корова, лошадь, и карета. |

To read a fable, draw a picture, write letters, play an air,
Читатѣ басня, рисоватѣ картина, писатѣ письмо, игратѣ пѣсня,

mend pens. To visit the brothers and the sisters, the mothers
чинитѣ перо. Посыщатѣ братѣ и сестра, мать

and the daughters, the fathers and the sons. To buy a hat
и дочѣ, отецѣ и сынѣ. Купитѣ шляпа

and a cap, gloves and shoes, stockings and garters.
и шапка, перчатка и башмакъ, чулокѣ и подвязка.

The conqueror has vanquished the troops and has subjected
Завоевателѣ побѣдилѣ войско, и покорилѣ

the people. Peter defeated the Swedes, conquered Esthonia
народѣ. Петръ разбилѣ Шведѣ, завоевалѣ Эстляндия

and Livonia, founded the city of Saint-Petersburg, and civilised
и Лифляндия, основалѣ городѣ Санктпетербургѣ, и просвѣтилѣ

Russia. The Russians have conquered the Tartars, the Turks,
Россія. Россіянинѣ побѣждалѣ Татаринѣ, Турокѣ,

the Swedes, the French and the Persian. The rains refresh
Шведѣ, Французѣ и Персiяннѣ. Дождь *m* освѣжаютѣ

the earth, and the frosts destroy the grass-hoppers.
земля, и холодѣ истребляютѣ саранча (*sing.*).

Children, be attentive! John, come here! Soldiers, *Vocative.*

Дитя, будьте прилежны! Иванѣ, прійди сюда! Воинѣ,

fight valliantly! God, preserve the Emperor! Lord,
сражайтесь храбро! Богѣ, спаси (*acc.*) Царѣ! Господѣ,

have mercy upon me!

помилуй меня!

The scholars write with a slate-pencil or with a pen and *Nominative*
Ученикъ пишутѣ грифель *m* или перо и *and Instru-*
mental.

ink. John plays with Alexis and with Basil, and Mary

чернила. Иванѣ играетѣ съ Алексѣй и съ Василѣй, а Марья

plays with Sophia and with Amy. A tart with almonds;

игруетѣ съ Софья и съ Любавѣ. Пирогѣ съ миндаль *m*;

pots with flowers; a basin of water; a man of wit and
горшóкъ съ цвѣтъ; кáдка съ водá; челоуѣкъ съ умъ и
of genius; a gallery of pictures. Towns with a fortress and
съ гѣніи; галерѣя съ картiна. Гóродъ съ кремль *т* и
a port; trees with leaves, flowers and fruits; shakos with
гáвань *ф*; дѣрево съ листь, цвѣтъ и плодъ; кiверъ съ
plumes; a room with doors; bread with salt; water with
султанъ; кóмната съ дверь *ф*; хлѣбъ съ соль *ф*; водá съ
wine; wine with water; professors with pupils; a letter with
винó; винó съ водá; профессоръ съ ученикъ; писемó съ
money. To draw with a pencil, to paint with a brush and
дѣньги *ф*. Рисовáть карандашъ, писáть кисть *ф* и
colours. The shop-keeper trades in tallow, in soap, in milk,
крáска. Купѣць торгуетъ сáло, мыло, молоко,
in flour, in groats, in wines, in beer, in cloth, in linen and
мукá, крупá, винó, пиво, сукно, полотно и
in laces, and the neighbours of the shop-keeper trade in oxen,
крúжево, а сосѣдъ купѣць торгуютъ волъ,
in sheep and in horses. Palaces with towers; churches with
барáнь и лошадъ *ф*. Дворѣць съ бáшня; цѣрковь *ф* съ
steeple; houses with windows; buildings with galleries,
колокóльня; домъ съ окно; здáніе съ галерѣя;
regiments with colours. The mountains abound in gold,
полкъ съ знáмя. Горá изобилуютъ зóлото,
in silver, in copper, in iron, in quick-silver and in lead.
серебрó, мѣдъ *ф*, желѣзо, ртуть *ф* и свинѣць.

Nominative
and Prepo-
sitional.

The fables of the bull and the ram, of the ass and the
Бáсня о быкъ и барáнь, объ осѣль и
nightingale; of the cicada and the ant; of the oak and
соловѣй; о кузнѣчикъ и муравѣй; о дубъ и
the reed; of the fox and the crow; of the wolf and the lamb.
тростникъ; о лисица и воронъ; о волкъ и агнѣнокъ.

The tales of the guardian-angel, of John and Mary; the
Сказка объ ангелъ-хранитель, объ Иванъ и Мάρья;

histories of Sergius the hermit; of the hero and the genius.
повѣсть о Сѣргіи пустынникъ; о герой и гѣній.

To speak of games, of lessons, of the time, of the place, of
Говорить объ игра, объ урокъ, о время, о мѣсто, объ
circumstances. In the work there is said a great deal about
обстоятельство. Въ сочинѣніе говорить много о

honour and infamy, about virtue and vice, about courage
честь и безчестье, о добродѣтель и порокъ, о храбрость
and pusillanimity. In the water live the fishes, the frogs and
и малодушіе. Въ водѣ живутъ рыба, лягушка и
the mollusca; and in the forests live the lions, the bears,
слизень *m*; и въ лѣсъ живутъ левъ, медвѣдь *m*,
the foxes and the hares.

лисица и заяць.

The books of the scholar please the master. The light The different cases.
Книга ученікъ нравятся (*dat.*) учитель. Свѣтъ

of the sun illumines the earth with its rays. The colours of
солнце озаряетъ земля лучъ. Цвѣтъ

the rose are agreeable to the eyes. The friends of humanity
роза (*сущ.*) приятны глазъ. Другъ челоувѣчество

do good to men. In the garden flourish roses with
дѣлають добро люди. Въ (*prep.*) садъ цвѣтуть роза съ (*prep.*)

thorns; for there is no rose without thorns. The children
шипъ; ибо нѣтъ (*gen.*) роза безъ (*instr.*) шипъ. Дитя

wash themselves with the water of the river. A glass of
умываются водѣ рѣкѣ. Стаканъ съ (*instr.*)

water is on the table of the room. Tears of joy glisten
водѣ стоить на (*prep.*) столѣ комната. Слезѣ радость блестѣть

in the eyes of the mother. The glory of the wicked is
въ (*prep.*) глазъ мать. Слава злодѣй (*ест.*)

without stability; but the names of the beneficent shine
 непродолжительна; но имя благодѣтель сѣяютъ
 in eternity. Happiness on earth consists in
 въ (*prep.*) вѣчность. Счастье на (*prep.*) землѣ состоитъ въ (*prep.*)
 tranquillity of mind and in purity of conscience. Young people
 спокойствіе духъ и въ чистотѣ совѣсть. Юношѣ
 love the song of the nightingale, on the bank of a river,
 любятъ пѣніе соловей, на (*prep.*) берегу ручей,
 by light of the moon. To tell the truth is the duty
 при (*prep.*) свѣтѣ луны. Говорить правда есть долгъ
 of children. To love God with heart and soul. The ants and
 дѣтя. Любить Богъ сердце и душа. Муравей и
 the beavers may serve as a pattern to man. An excursion
 бобръ могутъ служить (*instr.*) примѣръ человекъ. Поѣздка
 to Moscow and to Kiew. The entrance of the room
 въ (*acc.*) Москвѣ и въ Кіевѣ. Входъ въ (*acc.*) библіотека
 of reading (reading-room). Give to the master the book
 для (*gen.*) чтеніе. Подѣй учитель тетрадь
 of verses on the occasion of the feast. One must rise
 со (*instr.*) стихъ на (*acc.*) случай праздникъ. Надобно вставать
 in the morning, work in the day, rest in the evening, and
 (*instr.*) утро, работать день *m*, отдыхать вечеръ, и
 sleep at night. The roar of canons and the sound of bells
 спать ночь. Громъ пушка и звонъ колоколъ
 announced to the citizens the arrival of the conqueror
 возвѣстивъ гражданѣмъ о (*prep.*) прибытіе побѣдитель
 of the enemies of the country.
 врагъ отечество.

THE ADJECTIVE.

32. — The *adjectives* (прилагательныя имена) Division of the adjectives. in the Russian language are of three kinds: 1) The *qualifying* (качественныя) adjectives, as: чѣрный кафтанъ, a black coat; тихое дитя, a quiet child; весёлая жизнь, a joyous life. 2) The *possessive* (притяжательныя) adjectives, as: отцовъ сынъ, the father's son; лисья шкура, a fox skin; золотое кольцо, a gold ring; лѣтний садъ, the summer garden. 3) The *numeral* (числительныя) adjectives, as: два стола, two tables; второй мѣсяцъ, the second month.

To the adjectives belong also the *possessive*, *demonstrative*, *interrogative* and other pronouns, as also the *participles*, which are at times used as simple adjectives. The *Numeral* adjectives, which in Russian have their peculiar inflections, will be treated of in a separate article.

33. — The *qualifying* adjectives, or such as ex- Qualifying adjectives. press the quality of an object, end in *ый* and *ій*, or, with the accent, in *ой* (neut. *ое* and *ее*, fem. *ая* and *яя*); e. g. добрый, good; лёгкий, light; синий, blue; сухой, dry; большой, great.

34. — The *possessive* adjectives, most of which Possessive adjectives. are peculiar to the Russian language, are divided into *individual*, *common*, *material* and *circumstantial*.

1. The *individual* or *special* (личныя, частныя), possessive adjectives, which mark the relation of an object to an individual, or in other words to an animate or personified being, end in *овъ*, *евъ*, *инъ* and *ынъ* (neut. *о*, fem. *а*), or in *ь* (neut. *е*, fem. *я*), and are formed from the names of the objects in question by changing *ъ* and *о* into *овъ*

(or into *евъ* after the lingual or a hissing consonant'; *й* and *ь* into *евъ*; *а*, *я* and *ь* into *инъ*, and *ѡа* into *ѡинъ*, remembering however that in this formation the adjective follows the genitive inflection of the substantive; e. g. *сыновъ*, *the son's*; *Марковъ*, *Mark's*; *Львовъ*, *Leon's*; *Христовъ*, *Christ's*; *стражевъ*, *the guardian's*; *отцевъ*, *the father's*; *Андреевъ*, *Andrew's*; *царевъ*, *the king's*; *Никитинъ*, *Nicetas's*; *дядинъ*, *the uncle's*; *свекровинъ*, *mother-in-law's*; *материнъ*, *the mother's*; *лѣвицынъ*, *the girl's* (from *сынъ*, *Марко*, *Левъ*, *gen.* *Лѣва*, *Христосъ*, *gen.* *Христѣа*, *стражѣа*, *отцѣа*, *gen.* *отца*, *Андрѣй*, *царь*, *Никита*, *дядя*, *свекровъ*, *мать*, *gen.* *матери*, *дѣвица*). The termination *ь* is only found in the adjective *Господень*, *the Lord's* (from *Господѣ*), and in some few others in the ecclesiastical Slavonian.

To the above rule the following are exceptions: *Яковлевъ*, *James's*; *братинъ*, *the brother's*; *мужинъ*, *the husband's*; and also *Божій*, *God's*, formed from *Яковъ*, *братъ*, *мужъ* and *Богъ*. — We have still to remark that it is from these individual possessive adjectives that the patronymics, of which we have already spoken (§ 21), are formed; e. g. *Ивановичъ* and *Ивановна*, *John's son and daughter*; *Павловичъ* and *Павловна*, *Paul's son and daughter*; *Яковлевичъ* and *Яковлевна*, *James's son and daughter*; *Никитичъ* and *Никитична*, *Nicetas's son and daughter*.

2. The *common* or *generic* (общія, родовыя) possessive adjectives, which mark the relation of an object to all the individuals of the same species, have one principal termination, viz. *ій*, *овій* or *евій* (neut. *ѡе*, fem. *ѡя*), and some particular terminations; these are: *скій*, *ный*, *иный*, *овый*, *иій* (neut. *ѡе* and *ѡе*, fem. *ѡя* and *ѡя*), and are formed from the names of animate, inanimate and abstract objects: e. g. *рыбій*, *of a fish*; *медвѣжій*, *of a bear*; *птичій*, *of*

a bird; клопови́й, *of a bug*; конёви́й, *of a horse*; скóтскiй, *of cattle*; гуси́ный, *of a goose*; домо́вый, *domestic*; парово́й, *of steam*; рѣ́чной, *fluvial*; душе́вный, *of the soul*; жи́зненный, *vital*; сыно́внiй, *filial* (from рыба, медвѣ́дь, пти́ца, клопъ, конь, скотъ, гусь, домъ, паръ, рѣ́ка, душа́, жизнь, сынъ).

To the individual and common possessive adjectives belong also several Russian family names; e. g. Дми́триевъ, Пу́шкинъ, Завадо́вскiй, as also several names of towns and villages; e. g. Ка́шинъ, Боро́дино, Смоле́нскъ, &c.

3. The *material* (веще́ственный) possessive adjectives, which indicate the material of which a thing is made, are formed from the names of material objects by means of the terminations *ый, ный, яный* (neut. *ое*, fem. *ая*), as: золо́тои, *of gold*; желе́зный, *of iron*; сере́бряный, *of silver*; дере́вннiй, *of wood* (from золо́то, желе́зо, серебро́, дере́во).

4. The *circumstantial* (обсто́ятельственный) possessive adjectives are formed from nouns and adverbs signifying *time* and *place*, by means of the terminations *и́й* (neut. *ее*, fem. *яя*), and in the names of months, by the termination *скiй* (neut. *ое*, fem. *ая*); as: лѣ́тнiй, *of summer*; ны́нѣшнiй, *actual*; та́мошнiй, *of this place*; ма́ртовскiй, *of March*; ию́льскiй, *of July* (from лѣ́то, ны́нѣ, тамъ, мартъ, июль).

35. — The properties of the adjectives in Russian ^{Properties of adjectives.} are: the *gender* (ро́дъ), the *number* (числó), the *case* (паде́жъ), the *apocope of the termination* (у́сѣченiе оконча́нiя), and the *degrees of signification* or *degrees of the qualities* (сте́пени ка́чествъ), and

these properties are all marked by particular inflections.

Gender, number, case. 36. — As the adjective must agree in gender, number and case with the substantive which it qualifies, it has three terminations to indicate the difference of *gender*, two for the different *numbers* and seven for the *cases*.

Apocope of the termination. 37. — As the adjectives are used for two different purposes, firstly simply to qualify the noun to which they belong, as: *добрый человекъ*, a good man; *новая шляпа*, a new hat; and secondly to form the attribute of the proposition, as: *человекъ (есть) добръ*, the man is good; *шляпа была нова*, the hat was new; they have in Russian two different terminations, the one full (полное), the other apocopated (устьченное). These two terminations are as follows:

| SINGULAR. | | | | |
|-------------|---|---------|-----------|--|
| | Masculine. | Neuter. | Feminine. | |
| Full term: | ый (ой), ий; | ое, ее; | ая, яя; | |
| Apoc. term: | ъ, ъ; | о, е; | а, я; | |
| Examples: | { новѣй, синѣй; новое, синее; новая, синяя; новѣ, синѣ; ново, синѣ; новá, синя́; | | | |

| PLURAL. | | | |
|-------------|--|----------------|--|
| | Masculine. | Neut. and Fem. | |
| Full term: | ые, ie; | ыя, ia. | |
| Apoc. term: | ы, и; | ы, и. | |
| Examples: | { новѣе, синѣе; новыя, синія. новы, сині; новы, сині. | | |

These two examples *новѣй*, new, and *синѣй*, blue, show that the apocopated is formed from the full termination, by changing *ый* and *ий*, (or *ой* with the accent) into *ъ* and *ь*, according to

the nature of the preceding consonant, for the masculine, and by cutting of the final vowel in the other inflections. In this formation, the vowel *e* or *o* is inserted between two consonants in the masculine, in order to facilitate the pronunciation, and the semi-vowels *o* and *й* are changed into *e*, observing that the tonic accent, which remains on the same syllable in the inflections of the full termination, is often transposed in the apocopated termination, sometimes to the inserted vowel of the masculine, sometimes to the first syllable, at other times to the inflection of the feminine, and occasionally to that of the neuter and the plural; e. g.

| | |
|--|--|
| бѣлый, white, <i>apoc. term.</i> бѣль, лѣ, лѣ. | вѣрный, true, <i>apoc.</i> вѣрежь, рно, рна. |
| здоровый, wholesome, здоровѣ, ово, ова. | тяжкій, heavy, тяжекъ, жко, жка. |
| дорогой, dear, дорожь, ого, огѣ. | истинный, veritable, истиненъ, инно, инна. |
| великій, great, великъ, йко, йка. | древній, ancient, древень, вне, вя. |
| любій, stout, люжь, жѣ, жѣ. | полный, full, полноу, лно, лна. |
| хорошій, good, хорошиъ, ошѣ, ошѣ. | злой, evil, золь, зло, зла. |
| живой, live, живъ, йво, йва. | крѣпкій, strong, крѣпокъ, пко, пка. |
| сухой, dry, сухъ, сѣхо, сѣхѣ. | лёгкій, light, легокъ, гко, гка. |
| высокій, high, высокъ, окѣ, окѣ. | горькій, bitter, горекъ, рько, рька. |
| быстрый, rapid, быстръ, тро, трѣ. | сильный, vigorous, силенъ, льно, льна. |
| твёрдый, firm, твёрдъ, ёрдо, рдѣ. | спокойный, quiet, спокоенъ, оино, ойна. |

The following are exceptions to this rule: достойный, *worthy*; блаженный, *happy*; надменный, *proud*, and совершенный, *perfect*, which form: достоинъ, оино, ойна; блаженъ, надменъ, совершенъ, ённо, ённа.

The qualifying adjectives have both terminations, except радъ, *joyous*, and гораздъ, *except*, which have only the apocopated, while большоу, *great*, and меньшоу, *little*, have only the full termination. The individual possessive adjectives have only the apocopated termination, while the material and circumstantial possessive adjectives have only the full termination. The same is the case with several common possessive adjectives, with the exception of such as end in *йѣ*, which in the singular have the full, and in the plural the apocopated termination.

38. — The qualifying adjectives have five degrees ^{Degrees of signification.} of signification, viz. the *positive*, the *comparative*, the *superlative*, the *diminutive* and the *augmentative*.

1. The *positive* (положительная стéпень) is indicated by the ordinary terminations, full and apocopated; e. g. бѣлый and бѣль, *white*; сухой and сухъ, *dry*; синій and синь, *blue*.

2. The *comparative* (сравнительная стéпень) is marked in the full termination by the inflections *нѣйшій, айшій, шій* (neut. *еѣ*, fem. *аѣ*), and in the apocopated termination by the invariable inflections *нѣ* and *ѣ*, and is formed in three different ways:

1) By changing the termination of the positive, preceded by any consonant except a guttural, into *нѣйшій* for the full, and into *нѣ* for the apocopated termination; e. g.

бѣлый, white, *comp.* бѣлѣйшій and бѣлѣ, whiter.
 слабый, weak, слабѣйшій and слабѣ, weaker.
 живой, live, живѣйшій and живѣ, more live.
 полный, full, полнѣйшій and полнѣ, more full.

From this rule are excepted the following adjectives, which though they have the full termination *нѣйшій*, have the apocopated in *ѣ*, changing at the same time the mutable consonant.

богатый, rich, *comp. full term.* богатѣйшій, *apoc. term.* богачѣ.
 дешёвый, cheap, дешѣйшій, дешѣ.
 густой, thick, густѣйшій, гуще.
 красивый, handsome, краснѣйшій, краше.
 (No красивый, *red*, forms regularly: краснѣ.)
 крутой, steep, крутѣйшій, круче.
 поздний, tardy, позднѣйшій, позже.
 простой, simple, простѣйшій, проще (and простѣ.)
 твердый, firm, твердѣйшій, твёрже.
 толстый, thick, толстѣйшій, толще.
 частый, frequent, частѣйшій, чаще.
 чистый, pure, чистѣйшій, чище.

The adjectives горячій, *burning*; лысый, *bald*; сізый, *dove-coloured*; свѣжій, *fresh*; and others in *зый, сый, жій, чій, щій*, have only the apocopated termination *нѣ*: горячѣ, лысѣ, сізѣ, свѣжѣ.

2) By changing the termination of the positive, preceded by one of the gutturals (г, к, х), into *aiiuii* for the full, and into *e* for the apocopated termination, permuting the consonant at the same time; e. g.

строгий, strict, *compar.* строжайший and строже, stricter.
 крепкий, strong, крепчайший and крепче, stronger.
 ветхий, old, ветжайший and ветше, older.

Exceptions. — Most of the adjectives in *zii*, *kiü*, *xiü*, have not the full termination of the comparative; and also the following adjectives form their comparatives in different ways:

долгий, long, *comp. full term.* должайший, *apoc. term.* больше.
 дорогой, dear, дражайший, дороже.
 дальний and дальний, far, дальнейший, дальше.
 близкий, near, ближайший, ближе.
 глубокий, deep, глубочайший, глубже.
 горький, bitter, горчайший, горче.
 (No горький, *bad*, takes the Slav. inflection горший and горше.)
 короткий and краткий, short, кратчайший, короче.
 редкий, rare, редчайший, реже.
 сладкий, sweet, сладчайший, слаще.
 тонкий, thin, тончайший, тоньше.
 тяжкий, heavy, тяжчайший, тяжче.
 широкий, broad, широчайший, шире.
 гадкий, dirty, These five гадже.
 гладкий, smooth, have not the гладже.
 жидкий, liquid, full term. жидже.
 узкий, narrow, of the com- уже.
 слабый, slack, parative. слабже.

3) The inflection *uiiü* for the comparative is only found in the following adjectives, three of which take their comparative from another root:

высокий, high; *comp. full term.* высший, *apoc. term.* выше.
 молодой, young; младший, моложе.
 низкий, low; низший, ниже.
 старый, old; старший and старейший, старше and старше.
 худой, bad; худший, хуже.
 великий (and большой), great; больше.
 малый (and меньшой), little; меньше.
 хороший, good; лучший, лучше.

1. Care must be taken not to confound the comparative of the adjectives *больше*, *longer*; *то́ньше*, *finer*; *да́льше*, *more distant*, *больше*, *greater*, *мёньше*, *less*, with that of the adverbs *до́лге*, *longer*; *то́нже*, *finer*; *да́лже*, *further*; *бо́лге*, *more*; *мё́нже*, *less*. But this difference exists only in the above five words, the comparative of the adverbs being in every other instance similar to that of the adjectives in the apocopated termination.

2. The apocopated termination of the comparative sometimes takes the preposition *по*, which softens and diminishes the force; e. g. *по́быва́е*, *a little whiter*; *по́то́ньше*, *a little finer*; *по́лучше*, *a little better*.

3. Such adjectives as want one of the terminations of the comparative, supply its place with the adverb *бо́лге* before the positive; e. g. *бо́лге у́зкий*, *narrower*; *бо́лге жи́дкий*, *more liquid*; *бо́лге ра́дъ*, *more joyous*; *бо́лге го́раздъ*, *more expert*.

3. The *superlative* (*превосхо́дная стéпень*) in Russian is not marked by any particular inflection, except in the four following adjectives:

вели́кий, great; *compar.* *больш́ий*; *superl.* *величай́ший*, greatest.
высо́кий, high; *вы́сший*; . . . *высоча́йший*, highest.
мáлый, little; *мё́ньший*; . . . *малы́йший*, least.
ни́зкий, low; *ни́зший*; . . . *нижай́ший*, lowest.

In all the other adjectives, in the full termination, the superlative is expressed by that of the comparative, the words *изъ всѣхъ*, *of all*, being understood, or the particle *наи* being placed before it, or also by that of the positive, placing before it the words *са́мый* (*n. са́мое*, *f. са́мая*), as: *легча́йший* (*изъ всѣхъ*), *наплегча́йший* or *са́мый лёгкий*, *the lightest*; *луч́ший* (*изъ всѣхъ*), *наплуч́ший*, or *са́мый луч́ший* (improperly, for *са́мый хоро́ший*), *the best*. In the apocopated termination the superlative is the same as the comparative, adding the word *всѣхъ* or *всего́*, e. g. *всѣхъ лёгче*, *the lightest*; *всѣхъ луч́ше*, *the best*; *всего́ важнѣе*, *the most important*; *всего́ труднѣе*, *the most difficult*.

4. The *diminutive* degree (уменьшительная стéпень) is used to mark the diminution of quality, indicating either a want or smallness of any quality in an object, or a softening of the force of the quality, and also for the agreement of the adjective with the diminutive noun; e. g. *бѣловѣтная* черни́ла, *whitish ink*; *рыженькая* лоша́дка, *a little bay horse*; *мáленькая* дѣвочка, *a little young girl*. The diminutive adjective in the former case ends, in the full termination, in *овѣтый* or *евѣтый* (neut. *ое*, fem. *ая*), and in the apocopated in *овѣтѣ* or *евѣтѣ* (neut. *о*, fem. *а*), and in the latter case, in the full termination, it ends in *онькій* and *енькій* (neut. *ое*, fem. *ая*), and in the apocopated, in *онекѣ* and *енекѣ* (neut. *нѣко*, fem. *нѣка*); e. g.

бѣлый, white; *дѣт.* *бѣловѣтый* or *бѣловѣтъ*, and *бѣленькій* or *бѣленекъ*.
тѣплый, hot; . . . *тѣповѣтый* or *тѣповѣтъ*, and *тѣпленькій* or *тѣпенекъ*.
сухой, dry; . . . *суховѣтый* or *суховѣтъ*, and *сухонькій* or *сухонекъ*.
красный, red; . . . *красновѣтый* or *-новѣтъ*, and *красненькій* or *-нѣnekъ*.
синій, blue; . . . *синевѣтый* or *синевѣтъ*, and *синенькій* or *синѣnekъ*.
рыжий, bay; . . . *рыжевѣтый* or *рыжевѣтъ*, and *рыженькій* or *рыженекъ*.

The diminutive ending *овѣтый*, *евѣтый*, must not be confounded with the similar ending of the positive, which belongs to the qualifying adjectives; e. g. *виновѣтый*, *culpable*; *угловѣтый*, *angular*; *поздравѣтый*, *porous*; *угревѣтый*, *scaly*.

5. The *augmentative* degree (увеличительная стéпень) is used in the qualifying adjectives to express the abundance or excess of quality, and is formed in the full termination by the prepositive particle *пре*, and in the apocopated by the endings *ѣхонекѣ* and *ѣшенекѣ*, or *ѣхонекѣ* and *ѣшенекѣ* (neut. *нѣко*, fem. *нѣка*); e. g.

бѣлый, white; *аугм.* *пребѣлый*, or *бѣлѣхонекъ* and *бѣлѣшенекъ*, quite white.
сухой, dry; . . . *пресухой*, or *сухѣхонекъ* and *сухѣшенекъ*, very dry.
лѣгкій, light; . . . *прелѣгкій*, or *лѣгѣхонекъ* and *лѣгѣшенекъ*, very light.
мáлый, little; . . . *премáлый*, or *мáлѣхонекъ* and *мáлѣшенекъ*, very little.

DECLENSIONS OF ADJECTIVES.

[illegible]

The adjective прекрасный, *beautiful*, in which the particle *пре* has an augmentative meaning, is used as a simple adjective to be distinguished from красный, *red*; but it is not the same case with прелестный, *charming*, derived from прелесть, *charm*.

39. — The Russian adjectives have three *declensions*; the *first* for adjectives of the *full termination*, the *second* for those of the *apocopated*, and the *third* for those of the *mixed termination*, i. e. for such common possessive adjectives in *ию* (neut. *оо*, fem. *юя*), as have some inflections of the full and others of the apocopated termination. Each of these declensions has three endings for three genders, masculine, feminine and neuter, corresponding to the three declensions of substantives, as is seen in the opposite table.

In declining adjectives according to this table, attention is required to the following observations:

1. The inflection *ой* of the *nominative* singular masculine, instead of *ый*, or of *ий* preceded by a guttural or a hissing consonant, is only used when the accent is on the last syllable; e. g. слѣпой, *blind*; восковой, *of wax*; глухой, *deaf*; чужой, *foreign*; большой, *great* (instead of слѣпый, восковый, глухий, чужий, большой).

2. The inflection *ия* or *ія* of the *genitive* singular feminine is Slavonian, and is only used in poetry, or in religious prose; e. g. кротость святія жизни, *the sweetness of a holy life*; Соборъ Казанскія Божія Матери, *the Cathedral of Our-Lady of Casan*.

3. The inflection *ой*, *ей* or *ею* of the *instrumental* singular feminine is a contraction of *ою*, *ею* or *еюю* in use in familiar language.

4. The inflection *ю*, of the *prepositional* singular masculine and neuter of the II declension, is confined to the names of families and towns, and the inflection *омъ* to the individual possessive adjectives, and to the qualifying adjectives in the apocopated termination. (See Paradigms 9, 10, 11, 12, 13.)

PARADIGMS OF THE THREE

| DECLENSIONS: | | SINGU | | | | | |
|--------------|-------------|--|---------------------------|---------|-------------------|--------|-------|
| | | Masculine and neuter genders. | | | | | |
| | | Nomin. and Vocative. | Genitive. | Dative. | Accus. | Instr. | Prep. |
| FIRST. | FULL. | 1. { <i>м. новый</i> , new <i>н. новое</i> } | нов-аго ому . | | ымъ . . . омъ . | | |
| | | 2. { <i>м. мягкий</i> , tender <i>н. мягкое</i> } | мягк-аго ому . | | ымъ . . . омъ . | | |
| | | 3. { <i>м. синий</i> , blue <i>н. синее</i> } | син-аго ему . | | ымъ . . . емъ . | | |
| | | 4. { <i>м. свежий</i> , fresh <i>н. свежее</i> } | свеж-аго ему . | | ымъ . . . емъ . | | |
| | | 5. { <i>Графа</i> Толстой | Толст-аго ому . | | ымъ . . . омъ . | | |
| | | 6. { <i>м. портной</i> , a tailor | портн-аго ому . | | ымъ . . . омъ . | | |
| | | 7. { <i>н. жаркое</i> , a roast | жарк-аго ому . | | ымъ . . . омъ . | | |
| | | 8. | | | | | |
| | APOCOPATED. | 9. { <i>м. царевъ</i> , the king's <i>н. царева</i> } | царев-а у . | | ымъ . . . омъ . | | |
| | | 10. { <i>м. белый</i> , white <i>н. бело</i> } | бел-а ъ . | | ымъ . . . омъ . | | |
| | | 11. { <i>(Князь)</i> Решный | Решнн-а ъ . | | ымъ . . . ъ . | | |
| | | 12. { <i>(город)</i> Кашиный | Кашин-а у . | | ымъ . . . ъ . | | |
| | | 13. { <i>(село)</i> Бородино | Бородин-а ъ . | | ымъ . . . ъ . | | |
| | | 14. | | | | | |
| | | 15. { <i>м. Господень</i> , the Lord's <i>н. Господне</i> } | Господн-я ю . | | ымъ . . . емъ . | | |
| | | 16. { <i>м. синий</i> , blue <i>н. синѣ</i> } | син-я ю . | | ымъ . . . емъ . | | |
| THIRD. | MIXED. | 17. { <i>м. рыбій</i> , of fish <i>н. рыбье</i> } | рыб-ьяго ему . | | ьымъ . . . ьемъ . | | |

The following observations, relative to the *tonic accent* in the declension of the adjectives, are important:

1. All the inflections of the full and of the mixed termination, i. e. in the 1st and 3rd declension, retain the accentuation of the nominative singular masculine.

2. In the apocopated termination, i. e. in the 2nd declension, the accent is often transferred to the last syllable, sometimes only in the nominative feminine, and at other times in the neuter and in the plural. The oblique cases of the apocopated termination either retain the accentuation of the nominative, or transfer the accent to the last syllable.

DECLENSIONS OF ADJECTIVES.

| L A R. | | | | P L U R A L. | | | |
|---|------------|------------|------------|-------------------------------|---------------------|---------------------------|-----|
| <i>Feminine gender.</i> | | | | <i>For the three genders.</i> | | | |
| <i>N. and V. G. D. and P. Acc. Instr.</i> | | | | <i>Nom. and Voc.</i> | <i>Gen. and Pr.</i> | <i>Dat. Accus. Instr.</i> | |
| нов-ая | ой | ую | ою | м. нов-ые | нхъ | ымъ | ыми |
| мѣтк-ая | ой | ую | ою | м. мѣтк-е | нхъ | ымъ | ыми |
| сѣн-яя | ей | юю | ею | м. сѣн-е | нхъ | ымъ | ими |
| свѣж-ая | ей | ую | ею | м. свѣж-е | нхъ | ымъ | ими |
| (Графиня) | | | | | | | |
| Толст-ѣя | ой | ую | ою | (Графиня) Толст-е | нхъ | ымъ | ыми |
| кладов-ѣя | ой | ую | ою | порт-е | нхъ | ымъ | ыми |
| a storehouse. | | | | жарк-я | нхъ | ымъ | ими |
| | | | | кладов-ѣя | нхъ | ымъ | ими |
| царѣв-а | ой | ую | ою | царѣв-ы | нхъ | ымъ | ими |
| бѣл-ѣ | ой | ую | ою | бѣл-ы | нхъ | ымъ | ими |
| (Княгиня) | | | | | | | |
| Репнин-ѣ | ой | ую | ою | (Князь) Репнин-ы | нхъ | ымъ | ими |
| (дерева) | | | | | | | |
| Мурин-а | ой | ую | ою | | | | |
| Господн-я | ей | юю | ею | Господн-и | нхъ | ымъ | ими |
| снѣ-ѣ | ей | юю | ею | снѣ-и | нхъ | ымъ | ими |
| рыб-ѣя | ей | юю | ею | рыб-и | нхъ | ымъ | ими |

The *accusative masculine*, singular and plural, of the adjectives is like the *nominative*, when the noun, which they qualify, designates an inanimate or abstract object, as is also the case with the substantives; and it is like the *genitive*, when the noun designates an animate being, even when the accusative of the noun in question may not happen to be the same as the genitive, as is the case with the masculine substantives of the 3rd declension; ex. мы любимъ вѣрнаго слугу; we love the faithful servant; мы любимъ вѣрныхъ слугъ; we love the faithful servants.

5. The apocopated termination of the adjectives is often used instead of the full in poetry, for the sake of the rhythm; e. g. *пушисты* ины (instead of *пушистые*), *thick hoarfrost*; *быстры* воды (instead of *быстрыя*), *rapid waters*; *добр*у мѡлоду (instead of *доброму*), *to the good young man*; *сыр*у зѣмлю (instead of *сырую*), *the moist earth*.

6. The inflection *ie*, *ia*, *iazo*, &c. of the common possessive adjectives is used in an elevated style, and *de*, *ya*, *iazo*, &c. in familiar language.

7. As the *vocative* of the adjectives is always the same as the nominative, it has been omitted in the table of the declensions.

Paradigms
of the de-
clensions of
adjectives.

40. — With due attention to the above remarks all the adjectives of the Russian language can be declined according to the 17 paradigms. (See p. 76 sq.)

First
declension.

According to the 1st paradigm (но́вый) are declined: 1) the qualifying adjectives in *ый*; 2) the common possessive adjectives in *овый*, *есый*, *ный*, *иный*; 3) all the material possessive adjectives; 4) the diminutive adjectives in *оватый* and *еватый*; remarking that the termination *ый* when accented is changed into *ой*. Such are:

- | | |
|---|--|
| 1) <i>Добры́й</i> , good, <i>н. доброе, ф. добрая.</i> | <i>Доро́жный</i> , of road, <i>доро́жное, доро́жная.</i> |
| <i>Сильны́й</i> , vigorous, <i>сильное, сильная.</i> | <i>Носо́вой</i> , of the nose, <i>носо́вое, носо́вая.</i> |
| <i>Стары́й</i> , old, <i>ста́рое, ста́рая.</i> | 3) <i>Золо́той</i> , of gold, <i>золо́тое, золо́тая.</i> |
| <i>Чёрны́й</i> , black, <i>чёрное, чёрная.</i> | <i>Желѣ́зный</i> , of iron, <i>желѣ́зное, желѣ́зная.</i> |
| <i>Кра́сный</i> , red, <i>кра́сное, кра́сная.</i> | <i>Ма́слиный</i> , of oil, <i>ма́слиное, ма́слиная.</i> |
| <i>Бѣлы́й</i> , white, <i>бѣлое, бѣлая.</i> | <i>Кожа́ный</i> , of leather, <i>кожа́ное, кожа́ная.</i> |
| <i>Умы́й</i> , wise, <i>у́мное, у́мная.</i> | <i>Дерева́нный</i> , of wood, <i>дерева́нное, -ва́нная.</i> |
| <i>Гру́бый</i> , coarse, <i>гру́бое, гру́бая.</i> | 4) <i>Бѣло́ватый</i> , whitish, <i>бѣло́ватое, -ва́тая.</i> |
| <i>Полны́й</i> , full, <i>по́лное, по́лная.</i> | <i>Красно́ватый</i> , reddish, <i>красно́ватое, -ва́тая.</i> |
| <i>Нѣжны́й</i> , tender, <i>нѣжное, нѣжная.</i> | <i>Синева́тый</i> , bluish, <i>синева́тое, синева́тая.</i> |
| <i>Сля́пой</i> , blind, <i>сля́пое, сля́пая.</i> | <i>Рыжева́тый</i> , ruddy, <i>рыжева́тое, -ва́тая.</i> |
| <i>Просты́й</i> , simple, <i>простѣе, проста́я.</i> | |
| <i>Худы́й</i> , bad, <i>ху́дое, худа́я.</i> | |
| <i>Нѣмы́й</i> , dumb, <i>нѣмое, нѣма́я.</i> | |
| 2) <i>Бобра́вый</i> , of beaver, <i>н. бобра́вое, ф. -овая.</i> | |
| <i>Еже́вый</i> , of hedgehog, <i>еже́вое, еже́вая.</i> | |
| <i>Пчели́ный</i> , of bee, <i>пчели́ное, пче́линая.</i> | |

According to the 2nd paradigm (мягкій) are declined: 1) the qualifying adjectives in *и́й, кѣй, хѣй*; 2) the common possessive adjectives in *скѣй* and *чѣй*; 3) the diminutive adjectives in *енькѣй* and *онькѣй*; the termination *и́й* when accented being also changed into *ѡй*. Such are:

- | | |
|---|--|
| 1) Лѣгкѣй, light, л. лёгкое, ф. лёгкая. | Господскѣй, seigneurial, л. господское, ф. господская. |
| Строгѣй, strict, строгое, строгая. | Русскѣй, Russian, русское, русская. |
| Кроткѣй, kind, кроткое, кроткая. | Нѣмецкѣй, German, нѣмецкое, нѣмецкая. |
| Великѣй, great, великое, великая. | Людскѣй, men's, людское, людская. |
| Упругѣй, elastic, упругое, упругая. | Городскѣй, of a town, городское, городская. |
| Горькѣй, bitter, горькое, горькая. | 3) Маленькѣй, little, маленькое, -кая. |
| Вѣтхѣй, old, вѣтхое, вѣтхая. | Бѣленькѣй, whitish, бѣленькое, бѣленькая. |
| Дорогѣй, dear, дорогое, дорогая. | Лѣгонькѣй, lightish, лѣгонькое, -кая. |
| Сухѣй, dry, сухое, сухая. | |
| Глухѣй, deaf, глухое, глухая. | |
| 2) Звѣрскѣй, bestial, звѣрское, -ская. | |
| Женскѣй, feminine, женское, женская. | |

According to the 3rd paradigm (си́нѣй) are declined the adjectives: 1) qualifying, 2) circumstantial possessive, and 3) some common possessive, in *нѣй* (neut. *ее*, fem. *яя*); such are:

- | | |
|--|---|
| 1) Древнѣй, ancient, л. древнее, ф. древняя. [близняя. | Здѣшнѣй, of here, л. здѣшнее, ф. здѣшняя. |
| Ближнѣй, neighbour, ближнее, -няя. | Нынѣшнѣй, actual, нынѣшнее, -няя. |
| Дальнѣй, distant, дальнее, дальняя. | Зимнѣй, hybernal, зимнее, зимняя. |
| Искреннѣй, sincere, искреннее, искренняя. | Весѣннѣй, vernal, весѣнное, -няя. |
| Игрѣнѣй, light-sorrel, игрѣное, игрѣная. | Лѣтнѣй, estival, лѣтное, лѣтная. |
| Порожнѣй, empty, порожнее, порожняя. | Осеннѣй, autumnal, осеннее, осенняя. |
| Позднѣй, tardy, позднее, поздняя. | Прѣжнѣй, precedent, прѣжнее, -жая. |
| Раннѣй, early, раннее, ранняя. | Послѣднѣй, last, послѣднее, -няя. |
| 2) Вчерашнѣй, yesterday's, вчера-шнее, -шняя. | 3) Мужнѣй, marital, мужнее, муж-няя. |
| Вечернѣй, evening's, вечернее, ве-черняя. | Дружнѣй, friend's, дружнее, дру-жная. |
| Утреннѣй, morning's, утреннее, у-тренняя. | Сынѡвнѣй, filial, сынѡвное, сынѡв-ная. |

According to the 4th paradigm (свѣжѣй) are declined: 1) the qualifying adjectives in *жѣй, чѣй, шѣй* and *щѣй* (neut. *ее*, fem. *яя*); 2) all the comparatives and superlatives in the full termination; observing that the ending *и́й* when accented is changed into *ѡй*. Such are:

- | | |
|---------------------------------------|--------------------------------------|
| 1) Дюжій, robust, и. дюжее, ф. дюжая. | Чужой, foreign, и. чужбее, ф. чужая |
| Горячий, hot, горячее, горячая. | Общій, common, общее, общая. |
| Кипячий, boiling, кипячее, -чая. | Ничій, poor, нищее, ничая. |
| Хороший, good, хорошее, хорошая. | 2) Большой, greater, большее, больш- |
| Большой, great, больше, большая. | шая. |
| Похожий, resembling, похожее, -жая. | Лучший, better, лучшее, лучшая. |
| Пригожий, pretty, пригожее, при- | меньший, least, меньшее, меньшая. |
| гожая. | Нежный, more tender, -жнее. |
| | -шая. |

According to the 5th paradigm (Толстой) are declined family names in *ой* and *ий*, or in *ой* with the accent (fem. *ая*); the vowel *ы* being changed into *и* after a guttural. Such are:

- | | |
|-------------------------------------|------------------------------------|
| Смирной, Smirnoi, ф. Смирная. | Трубеткой, Troobetzkoj, ф. Трубет- |
| Полевой, Polaivoj, Полевая. | кая. |
| Нарезный, Naraiznyi, Нарезная. | Завадовский, Zavadovski, Завадов- |
| Браницкий, Branitzki, Браницкая. | ская. |
| Бобринский, Bobrinski, Бобринская. | Жуковский, Zhookovski, Жуковская. |
| Долгорукий, Dolgorooki, Долгорукая. | Мещерский, Mestcherski, Мещерская. |

Such family names as are formed from the genitive, as: Мертвого, *Mertvogo*; Пареного, *Parenogo*; Сухихъ, *Sokhikhъ*, Нагихъ, *Nagikhъ*, are indeclinable.

According to the 6th, 7th and 8th paradigm (портной, жаркое, кладовая) are declined some masculine neuter and feminine nouns, which are in fact only adjectives used as substantives, remembering to change *о* into *е* and *ы* into *и* after a guttural or a hissing consonant. Such are:

- | | |
|-------------------------|----------------------------------|
| 1) Выборный, a deputy. | 2) Животное, an animal. |
| Вестовой, a messenger. | Мороженое, ice-creams. |
| Кормчий, the pilot. | Насекомое, an insect. |
| Часовой, a sentry. | 3) Вселенная, the universe. |
| Мастеровой, an artisan. | Гостиная, a drawing-room. |
| Подъёмный, a clerk. | Набережная, a quay. |
| Прожойный, a passenger. | Чертежная, room for the drawers. |
| Певчий, a chanter. | Передняя, an antechamber. |

Second declension.

According to the 9th paradigm (царевъ) are declined the individual possessive adjectives in *овъ, евъ, инъ, ынъ* (neut. *о, fem. а*). Such are:

- | | |
|--------------------------------------|---|
| Сыновъ, son's, и. сыново, ф. сынова. | Христовъ, Christ's, и. Христово, ф. Христова. |
| Петровъ, Peter's, Петрово, Петрова. | Материнъ, mother's, материно, -рина. |
| Отцовъ, father's, отцово, отцова. | Дочеринъ, daughter's, дочерино, дб- |
| Гербовъ, hero's, гербово, гербова. | черина. |
| Павловъ, Paul's, Павлово, Павлова. | |

Никѣтъ. Nicetas's, *н.* Никѣтно, *ф.* Царѣцѣтъ, the queen's, *н.* царѣцѣно.
 Никѣтина. *ф.* -цына. | -цына.
 Ильяѣтъ. Elias's, Ильяѣно, Ильяѣна. Дѣвѣцѣтъ, the girl's, дѣвѣцѣно.

The adjective Христѣтъ takes in the prepositional singular the inflection *ѣ* (instead of *омѣ*) in the phrase: по Рождествѣ Христѣтъ (instead of Христѣбѣомѣ), after the Birth of Christ.

According to the 10th paradigm (бѣтъ) are declined the qualifying adjectives in the apocopated termination in *ѣ* (neut. *о*, fem. *а*), with the exception of those in *жѣ*, *чѣ*, *шѣ* and *щѣ*, which belong to the 16th paradigm, remembering to change *и* into *у* after the gutturals (*з*, *к*, *х*), and remarking that the tonic accent, which remains on the same syllable in all the inflections of the full termination, is often transferred, in the apocopated, to the last syllable, sometimes in the feminine only, and at other times also in the neuter and plural. Such are:

| | |
|--|---|
| Радѣ, joyous, <i>н.</i> радѣ, <i>ф.</i> радѣ; <i>фл.</i> | Высоѣтъ, high, <i>н.</i> высоѣ, <i>ф.</i> высокѣ; |
| радѣ. | <i>фл.</i> высокѣ. |
| Гораздѣ, expert, -до, -да; гораздѣ. | Сильнѣ, vigorous, силѣно, силѣнѣ; |
| Новѣ, new, новѣ, новѣ; новѣ. | силѣнѣ. |
| Слабѣ, weak, слабѣ, слабѣ; слабѣ. | Умнѣ, wise, умнѣ, умнѣ; умнѣ. |
| Цѣлѣ, entire, цѣлѣ, цѣлѣ; цѣлѣ. | Теплѣ, hot, теплѣ, теплѣ; теплѣ. |
| Велиѣ, great, велиѣ, велиѣ; велиѣ. | Легѣ, light, легѣ, легѣ; легѣ. |
| Сухѣ, dry, сѣхѣ, сѣхѣ; сѣхѣ. | Добрѣ, good, добрѣ, добрѣ; добрѣ. |
| Крѣпокѣ, strong, крѣпкѣ, крѣпкѣ; крѣпкѣ. | Жѣлтѣ, yellow, жѣлтѣ, жѣлтѣ; жѣлтѣ. |
| | Боленѣ, sick, больнѣ, больнѣ; больнѣ. |

According to the 11th paradigm (Ренѣтъ) are declined family names in *овѣ*, *евѣ*, *инѣ* and *ынѣ* (fem. *а*), which take in the prepositional singular masculine the inflexion *ѣ* (instead of *омѣ*). Such are:

| | |
|--|---|
| Сувѣровѣ, Suvorof, <i>ф.</i> Сувѣрова. | Дмитрѣвѣ, Dmitrief, <i>ф.</i> Дмитрѣва. |
| Кутѣзовѣ, Kootsoof, Кутѣзова. | Гурѣвѣ, Goorief, Гурѣва. |
| Ломѣнѣсовѣ, Lomonossof, Ломѣнѣсова. | Васѣльвѣ, Vassilief, Васѣльва. |
| Стерѣганѣвѣ, Stroganof, Стерѣганова. | Державинѣ, Derzhavin, Державина. |
| Крыловѣ, Krylof, Крылова. | Карамзинѣ, Karamzin, Карамзина. |
| Шинѣковѣ, Shishkof, Шинѣкова. | Княжинѣ, Kniazhnin, Княжинѣ. |
| Херѣсковѣ, Kheraskof, Херѣскова. | Пушѣкинѣ, Pooshkin, Пушѣкина. |
| Орѣловѣ, Orlof, Орѣлова. | Потѣмкинѣ, Potiomkin, Потѣмкина. |
| | Голѣцинѣ, Golitzin, Голѣцина. |

Foreign family names, such as: Бѣзѣдовѣ, *Basedow*; Кѣнѣкринѣ, *Cancrin*, are declined like the substantives, and, having no feminine, are indeclinable when referring to females. The same

remark applies equally to Russian family names ending in *вичъ*; but sometimes in feminine they take the termination *вичева*, which then is declined as an adjective; e. g. у Графини Кѣн-кринъ, at the Countess Cancrin; у Госпожи Максимовичъ or Максимовичевой, at Madame Maximovitch.

According to the 12th, 13th and 14th paradigms (Кашинъ, Бородино, Мурина) are declined such names of towns, boroughs and villages, as end in the masculine in *овъ, евъ, инъ, ынъ*; in the neuter in *ово, ево, ино, ыно*, and in the feminine in *ова, ева, ина, ына*, which take also in the *prepositional* singular masculine and neuter the inflection *ѣ* (instead of *омъ*). Such are:

| | |
|---------------------------------|------------------------------------|
| 1) (города) Борисовъ, Borissow. | Царичино, Tzaritzino. |
| Могилёвъ, Mohilef. | Останкино, Ostankino. |
| Алексинъ, Alexin. | 3) (деревня) Парголово, Pargolova. |
| Козловъ, Kozlof. | Краскова, Kraskova. |
| 2) (село) Тарутино, Tarootino. | Леташёва, Letachova. |
| Измайлово, Izmailovo. | Валутина, Valootina. |

Exceptions to this rule are the names of the following towns: Кіевъ, *Kief*; Псковъ, *Pleskov*; Харьковъ, *Charkof*; Гдовъ, *Gdof*; Ростовъ, *Rostof*; Орловъ, *Orlof*; as also the names of foreign towns, e. g. Берлинъ, *Berlin*, which are declined like substantives, having in the *instrumental* singular the inflection *омъ* (and not *ымъ*). The same is the case with the names of towns in *скъ, цкъ* and *ъ*; as: Смоленскъ, *Smolensk*; Полоцкъ, *Polotsk*; Ярославъ, *Yaroslavl*, &c.

In such names of towns as are formed of *ноеъ* and *ьно*, as: Новгородъ, *Novgorod*; Белоозеро, *Bieloozero*, both the adjective and substantive are declined: *G.* Новгорода, Бѣлоозера; *D.* Новугороду, Бѣлоозеру; *I.* Новымъ-городомъ, Бѣлымъ-озеромъ; *P.* о Новугородѣ, Бѣлѣозерѣ (taking also the inflection *ѣ* instead of *омъ*).

According to the 15th paradigm (Господень) is declined the individual possessive adjective:

Божій, of God, *n.* Божіе, *f.* Божія; *pl.* Божіи, which must not be confounded with the common possessive adjective божескій, *divine, relating to the attributes of God*. The adjective Божій takes also the inflections of mixed termination, as in Божье дерево, *southern wood* (a plant); Божья коровка, *cochineal, the lady-bird*; *G.* Божьяго дерева, Божьей коровки, *D.* Божьему дереву, &c.

According to the 16th paradigm (сннъ) are declined the qualifying adjectives in the apocopated termination ending in *o* or *ъ* (neut. *e*, fem. *я*), and also those in *жсѣ*, *чѣ*, *шѣ*, *щѣ* (neut. *e*, fem. *я*), remembering to change *я* into *a* and *ю* into *y* after the hissings (ж, ч, ш, щ). Such are:

| | |
|--|---|
| Дрэвєнь, ancient, <i>н.</i> дрэвє, <i>ф.</i> дрэвня. | Свѣжъ, fresh, <i>н.</i> свѣжѣ, <i>ф.</i> свѣжѣ. |
| Искренєнь, sincere, искренне, -ення. | Рыжъ, caroty, рыже, рыжѣ. |
| Порѣжєнь, empty, порѣжие, порѣжня. | Горѣчь, burning, горячо, горячѣ. |
| Дюжь, robust, дюжѣ, дюжѣ. | Хорѣшь, good, хорошо, хорошѣ. |
| Похѣжь, semblable, похѣже, похѣжа. | Тошъ, fasting, тошно, тошѣ. |

According to the 17th paradigm (рыбій) are declined the common possessive adjectives in *ій*, *овій*, *евій* (neut. *оѣ*, fem. *оѣ*), which are formed from the specific names of animals; e. g. Third declension.

| | |
|--|--|
| Олєній, of deer, <i>н.</i> олєньѣ, <i>ф.</i> олєньѣ. | Птїчїй, of bird, <i>н.</i> птїчьѣ, <i>ф.</i> птїчьѣ. |
| Соболїй, of sable, соболѣѣ, соболѣѣ. | Птѣушїй, of cock, птѣушьѣ, птѣушьѣ. |
| Козїй, of goat, козьѣ, козьѣ. | Верблюжїй, of camel, верблюжьѣ, -жьѣ. |
| Корѣвїй, of cow, корѣвьѣ, корѣвьѣ. | Лебѣжїй, of swan, лебѣжьѣ, лебѣжьѣ. |
| Овєчїй, of sheep, овєчьѣ, овєчьѣ. | Волѣвїй, of ox, волѣвьѣ, волѣвьѣ. |
| Мєдвѣжїй, of bear, мєдвѣжьѣ, мєдвѣжьѣ. | Конєвїй, of horse, конєвьѣ, конєвьѣ. |
| Баранїй, of ram, бараньѣ, бараньѣ. | Мѣшїй, of fly, мѣшьѣ, мѣшьѣ. |
| Говѣжїй, of ox, говѣжьѣ, говѣжьѣ. | Тєлѣчїй, of calf, тєлѣчьѣ, тєлѣчьѣ. |
| Слонѣвїй, of elephant, слонѣвьѣ, -вьѣ. | Клопѣвїй, of bug, клопѣвьѣ, клопѣвьѣ. |
| Сомѣвїй, of silurus, сомѣвьѣ, сомѣвьѣ. | Вѣлчїй, of wolf, вѣлчьѣ, вѣлчьѣ. |
| Лїсїй, of fox, лїсьѣ, лїсьѣ. | Челѣвѣчїй, of man, челѣвѣчьѣ, -чьѣ. |

The possessive adjective *челѣвѣчїй* is used when applied to man as an animal, and the adjective *челѣвѣчєскїй* (*н.* оѣ, *ф.* я) to man as an intelligent being.

EXERCISES ON THE ADJECTIVES.

It is necessary to observe preliminarily that according to the rules of construction in the Russian language the adjective is usually placed before the substantive, when it does not form the attribute of the proposition; and that the verb *to be* is commonly understood in the present.

An empty pocket; the pocket is empty. A strong castle; Аposcope of the
 Пустѣй карманъ; (есѣ) . Крѣпкїй замокъ; termination.

the castle is strong. A faithful servant; the servant has been
 Вѣрнїй слуга; былъ

faithful. The soft wax; the wax is soft. A quiet sleep; the
 . Мягкій воскъ; . Спокойный сонъ;

sleep is quiet. A worthy son; the son is worthy. A true
 . Достойный сынъ; . Истинный

friend; the friend is true. Perfect repose; the repose
 другъ; . Совершенный покой;

will be perfect. A transparent glass; the glass is transparent.
 будетъ . Прозрачный стекло;

An ancient tradition; the tradition was ancient. A hot summer;
 Древний преданіе; было . Тёплый лѣто;

the summer will be hot. A blunt pen; the pen is blunt.
 будетъ . Тупой перо;

An old hut; the hut is old. A blue paper; the paper is
 Вѣтхій хижина; . Синій бумага;

blue. New houses; the houses are new. Rich families;
 . Новый домъ; (суть) . Богатый семья;

the families were rich. Red ensigns; the ensigns will be red.
 были . Красный знамя; . будутъ .

Degrees of White paper; whiter paper; the whitest paper. The Neva
 signification. Бѣлый бумага; . Невá

is rapid, and the Volga is more rapid. The milk is
 (есть) быстрый, а Волга . Молоко

liquid, and the water is more liquid. A deep brook; a deeper
 жидкій, а вода . Глубокій ручей;

river. The houses are high, and the towers are higher.
 рѣкá. Домъ (суть) высокій, а башня .

Good tea; better tea; the best tea. The dogs are little;
 Хорошій чай; . Собака малый;

the cats are less; but the mice are the least. The father is
 кошка ; но мышь . Отець

young; the mother is younger; but the sister is the youngest.
 молодой; мать f ; но сестра .

The hay is dear, and the straw is dearer. Milk is sweet;
 Сѣно дорогѣе, а солома . Молоко сладкѣе;
 sugar is sweeter; but honey is the sweetest of all.
 сахаръ ; но медъ .

Some whitish paper; some reddish ink; some blackish
 Бѣлый бумага; бу́рый чернила *pl*; чёрный
 water; the colour is bluish. A little red cow; a little pony;
 вода; краска (*ест*) синій. Бу́рый коровка; ма́лый лоша́дка;
 a little piebald horse; a poor little girl; the grey-headed
 пѣгій лоша́дка; бѣдный дѣвочка; старичёкъ
 man is very old; the little old woman is very good. Very white
 (*ест*) ста́рый; ста́рушка до́брый. Бѣ́лый
 paper; the paper is very white; very dry wood; the wood
 бума́га; ; су́хой дрова́ *pl*;
 is very dry.

The master of the large gardens, and the mistress of the new Declension of the full termination.
 Хозяи́нъ обши́рный садъ, и хозяйка но́вый
 house. A glass of good water and of red wine; whole
 до́мъ. Стака́нъ хоро́ший вода́ и краси́вый вино́; це́лый
 pots of pork-fat and of fir-resin. До good
 горшочёкъ свиной са́ло и ело́вый смо́ла. Дѣ́лай (*acc.*) до́бро
 to poor children and to infirm old men, and do not go
 бѣ́дный дитя́ и дря́хлый ста́рикъ, и не ходи́
 into the fields of others. This is the house of the Prince
 по (*dat.*) по́ле чужо́й. Вотъ (*nom.*) до́мъ Кня́зь
 Dolgoruki, that is the palace of the Countess Tolstoi, and
 Долгору́кий, вотъ дворе́ць Гра́финя Толсто́й, а
 there are the large gardens of the young Counts Zavadovski.
 вотъ обши́рный садъ молодо́й Гра́фъ Завадо́вский.
 I have admired the agreeable song of the nightingale of last year.
 Я дивя́лся (*dat.*) прі́ятный пѣ́ніе соловей́ прошлаго́дній.

To cut a swan's quill with a blunt penknife. There are
 Чинить (acc.) лебединый перо тупой ножикъ. Вотъ (nom.)
 some goose quills, some red crayons, some thick blank books,
 гусиный перо, красный карандашъ, толстый тетрадь;
 some oak-rulers, and great mathematical compasses, and here
 дубовый линейка, и большой циркуль *m*, а вотъ
 are some woollen clothes, some silk stockings, some beaver hats,
 суконный кафтанъ, шелковый чулокъ, пуховый шляпа,
 fine linen, and still finer lace. Love good
 тонкий поютно и тончайший кружево. Люби (acc.) непорочный
 morals; read useful books; honour old people;
 нравъ; читай (acc.) полезный книга; чтн (acc.) старый люди *pl*;
 praise good actions; keep the honest and faithful
 хвали (acc.) добрый дѣло; береги (acc.) честный и вѣрный
 servant. Give the new book to the most attentive
 слуга. Подари (acc.) новый книга (dat.) самый прилежный
 scholar. You praise the weather of spring, the splendour
 ученикъ. Ты хвалишь (acc.) погода весенний, ясность *f*
 of the summer nights, the coolness of autumn, and the colds
 лѣтний ночь *f*, прохлада осенний и холодъ
 of winter. I esteem the celebrated men, and the illustrious
 зимний. Я уважаю (acc.) славный мужъ и знаменитый
 commanders of ancient times. The great military manœuvres of
 полковонецъ древний время. Большой манѣвръ въ (prep.)
 this year will take place at Krasnoe Selo, and on the
 нынѣшний годъ будутъ въ (prep.) Красное Село и на (prep.)
 mountain of Douderhof.
 Горы Дудергофскій.

Declension
 of the apo-
 copated ter-
 mination.

He has left the house of his father, and he does
 Онъ выѣхалъ изъ (gen.) домъ отцевъ, и дѣлаетъ (acc.)
 good to the daughter of his sister. He has sold the property
 добро (dat.) дочь *f* сестринъ. Онъ продалъ (acc.) имѣние

of his wife to the son of his brother. To visit the temples of
жѣнниъ (*dat.*) сынъ братниъ. Посѣщать (*acc.*) храмъ

the Lord and the churches of God. To resign one's self to
Господень и церковь Божіи. Повиноваться (*dat.*)

the will of the Lord, and to acknowledge the majesty of the
воли Господень, и познавать (*acc.*) величество

name of God. The first Russian Grammar was written by
имя Божіи. Первый Русскій Грамматика была написана (*instr.*)

the immortal Lomonossov, and the History of Russia by
бесмертныи Ломоносовъ, и Исторія Россійскій (*instr.*)

Nicholas Mikhailovitch Karamzin. The battles against the
Николай Михайлович Карамзинъ. Сраженіе съ (*instr.*)

French were fought near Borodino and Borissof.
Французъ происходилъ подъ (*instr.*) Бородино и подъ Борисовъ.

I have lived at Novgorod and at Bieloozero. The villages
Я жила въ (*prep.*) Новгородъ и въ Белоозеро. Деревня

of the Princess Saltykof are situated near the town of Kashin.

Княгиня Салтыковъ лежатъ подъ (*instr.*) городъ Кашинъ.

There is a cloak of fox-skin, a sable-cap, a bird-nest, Declension of the mixed
Вотъ (*nom.*) шуба лисій, соболій шапка, птичій гнѣздо, termination

some hare-skins, and some elephant's teeth. A pood of deer-
заячій мехъ и слоновій зубъ. Пудъ оленин

flesh, a yard of ox-skin, and a pound of calf's brains. Do
мясо, аршинъ воловій кожа, и фунтъ телячій мозгъ. Не

not go on the track of a wolf, and do not enter into the den
ходи по (*dat.*) слѣдъ волчій, и не входи въ (*acc.*) берлогу

of the bear. A dissertation on the man's eye, and on the
медвѣжій. Разсужденіе о (*prep.*) человѣчій глазъ, и о

fish-head. He deals in isinglass, in ox-fat,
рыбий голова. Онъ торгуетъ (*instr.*) рыбій клей, бычачій сало,

in goats' skins, and in cocks' combs.

козій шкура, и петушій гребень *т.*

Declension
of various
adjectives.

The braggart is like the jay, adorned with
Хвастуны́ (ессть) похо́жий на (acc.) со́я, укра́шенный (instr.)

peacocks' feathers. The brother of the neighbour has arrived from
павли́ний перо́. Братъ сосѣдовъ при́ехалъ изъ (gen.)

a distant town, and the sister from a more distant village.
да́льний городъ, а сестра́ изъ да́льний деревня́.

John's coat is small, but that of Peter is still
Ива́новъ пла́тье (ессть) у́зкій, но (пла́тье) Петро́въ (ессть) ещё

smaller. The good little old woman lives in a damp
у́зкій. До́брый стару́шка живётъ въ (pref.) сырой

house, situated near the village Tzaritzino. I have bought a
домъ, лежа́щий подъ (instr.) село́ Цари́цыно. Я купи́лъ (acc.)

cloak of bear-skin with a collar of beaver-skin and a
шу́ба медве́жий съ (instr.) воротни́къ бобра́вый, и

cap of beaver-skin with a silk-ribbon. There is a handsome
ша́пка бобра́вый съ шелко́вый лѣнта. Вотъ (nom.) прекра́сный

book with a rich binding of morocco. Where shall we
кни́га въ (pref.) бога́тый пере́плётъ са́мый. Гдѣ мы

find an instance of purer self-denial, of more exalted
найде́мъ приме́ръ чи́стый самоотве́рженіе, вы́сокій

love for the native land?

любо́вь ꙗ́къ (dat.) оте́чество?

THE NUMERALS.

Division of
numerals.

41. — The *numerals* (числи́тельные и́мена) are of two kinds: 1) the *cardinal* numerals (ко́личественны́я), which express the number; and 2) the *ordinal* numerals (по́рядочны́я), which indicate order or rank, and are formed (with exception of *первы́й*) from the cardinals, as is seen below.

CARDINAL NUMERALS.

ORDINAL NUMERALS.

| | |
|---|---|
| 1. одинъ, <i>н. одно, ф. одна</i> (<i>sl. еди́нъ, ѱно, ѱна</i>) | первы́й, <i>н. первое, ф. первая</i> , first. |
| 2. два, <i>ф. двѣ</i> | второ́й, <i>бе, ая</i> , second. |
| 3. три | трети́й, <i>тѣе, тѣа</i> , third. |
| 4. четыре | четверты́й, <i>оѣ, ая</i> , fourth. |
| 5. пять | пѣты́й, <i>оѣ, ая</i> , fifth. |
| 6. шесть | шестой, <i>бе, ая</i> , sixth. |
| 7. семь (<i>sl. седьмѣ</i>) | седьмо́й, <i>бе, ая</i> , seventh. |
| 8. восемь (<i>sl. осьмѣ</i>) | осьмо́й, <i>бе, ая</i> , eighth. |
| 9. девѣть | девяты́й, <i>оѣ, ая</i> , ninth. |
| 10. де́сять | десяты́й, <i>оѣ, ая</i> , tenth. |
| 11. одинна́дцѣть | одинна́дцѣтый <i>or</i> первы́й на- десять, 11th. |
| 12. двѣнна́дцѣть (<i>sl. двана́дцѣтъ</i>) | двѣнна́дцѣтый <i>or</i> второ́й на- десять, 12th. |
| 13. тринна́дцѣть | тринна́дцѣтый <i>or</i> трети́й на- десять, 13th. |
| 14. четырна́дцѣть | четырна́дцѣтый <i>or</i> четверты́й на-десять, 14th. |
| 15. пѣтна́дцѣть | пѣтна́дцѣтый <i>or</i> пѣты́й на-де- сять, 15th. |
| 16. шестна́дцѣть | шестна́дцѣтый <i>or</i> шесто́й на- десять, 16th. |
| 17. семна́дцѣть | семна́дцѣтый <i>or</i> седьмо́й на- десять, 17th. |
| 18. осьмна́дцѣть <i>or</i> восемна́д- цѣть | осьмна́дцѣтый <i>or</i> осьмо́й на- десять, 18th. |
| 19. девѣтна́дцѣть | девѣтна́дцѣтый <i>or</i> девяты́й на- десять, 19th. |
| 20. двѣдцѣть (<i>sl. двѣдѣсятъ</i>) | двѣдцѣты́й (<i>sl. двѣдѣсяты́й</i>), <i>оѣ, ая</i> , 20th. |
| 21. двѣдцѣть одинъ | двѣдцѣть первы́й, 21st. |
| 22. двѣдцѣть два | двѣдцѣть второ́й, 22d. |
| 30. три́дцѣть | три́дцѣты́й, <i>оѣ, ая</i> , 30th. |
| 40. со́рокъ (<i>sl. четы́редѣсятъ</i>) | сороко́вой (<i>sl. четы́редѣсяты́й</i>), <i>бе, ая</i> , 40th. |
| 50. пѣтьдѣсятъ | пѣтьдѣсяты́й, <i>оѣ, ая</i> , 50th. |

| | |
|--|--|
| 60. шестьдесятъ | шестидесятый, ое, ая, 60th. |
| 70. семьдесятъ | семидесятый, ое, ая, 70th. |
| 80. восемьдесятъ | осмидесятый, ое, ая, 80th. |
| 90. девяносто (<i>sl. девять-десять</i>) | девяностый (<i>sl. девяностый</i>) 90th. |
| 100. сто | сотый, ое, ая, hundredth. |
| 200. двѣсти | двухъ-сотый, ое, ая, 200th. |
| 300. триста | трѣхъ-сотый, ое, ая, 300th. |
| 400. четыреста | четырёхъ-сотый, ое, ая, 400th. |
| 500. пятьсотъ | пятисотый, ое, ая, 500th. |
| 600. шестьсотъ | шестисотый, ое, ая, 600th. |
| 700. семьсотъ | семисотый, ое, ая, 700th. |
| 800. восемьсотъ | осмисотый, ое, ая, 800th. |
| 900. девятьсотъ | девятисотый, ое, ая, 900th. |
| 1000. тысяча (<i>sl. тысяща</i>) | тысячный, ое, ая, thousandth. |
| 2000. двѣ тысячи | двухъ-тысячный, ое, ая, two thousandth. |
| 10,000. десять тысячъ (<i>sl. тма</i>) | десятитысячный, ое, ая, ten thousandth. |
| 100,000. сто тысячъ | стотысячный, ое, ая, 100-thousandth. |
| 1,000,000. миллионъ | миллионный, ое, ая, millionth. |
| 2,000,000. два миллиона | двухъ-миллионный, ое, ая, two millionth. |
| 1,000,000,000. тысяча мил- ліоновъ | тысячемиллионный, ое, ая, 1000-millionth. |
| 1,000,000,000,000. биліонъ | биліонный, ое, ая, billionth. |

To the cardinal numerals belong the *fractional* (дрѣбныя) numerals, such as: половѣна, *the half*; треть, *the third*; чѣтверть, *the fourth*; осьмѣха, *the eighth*; полторá, *one and a half*; полтретья, *two and a half*; полчетвертá, *three and a half*, &c.; and to the ordinal numerals belong also the circumstantial adjectives другóй, *other*, and послѣдній, *last*: другóй being used instead of вторóй, *second*, and послѣдній being opposed to пѣрвый, *first*.

From the cardinal numerals *два, три*, &c. as far as *десять*, as also from *сто*, are formed the *collective* (собрáтательныя) numerals: *двое, трое, четверо, пятеро*, &c., *десятеро, сотеро*. The following words also belong to the collective numerals: *оба* (*f. оба*), *both*; *двóйка, two*; *трóйка, three*; *пятóкъ, five*; *десятокъ, ten*; *дюжина, a dozen*; *сóтня, a hundred*.

The numerals *одíнь* and *пéрвый* are also used as qualifying adjectives, and in that case take some inflections peculiar to adjectives. *Одíнь* takes the augmentative termination *однѣхонекъ* and *однѣшенекъ*; and *пéрвый* takes the diminutive termination *пéрвенькíй*, as also the inflection of the superlative *пéрвѣйшій* or *самый пéрвый*.

42. — As regards declension, the numerals may be considered as substantive and adjective. The *substantive* numerals are: *сорокъ, сто, девяносто, тысяча, миллионъ, половина, треть f., пятóкъ, десятокъ, дюжина*, &c. The gender of these, as also their declension, is indicated by their termination. All the ordinal numbers, and the cardinal *одíнь*, are numerals adjective. All the other numerals are sometimes adjective, requiring the same case as the nouns to which they are joined, and sometimes substantive, in which occasion they require the noun to which they belong to be put in the genitive case, as will be seen later. Some of the last mentioned have the inflections of nouns, while others have inflections peculiar to themselves. A general view of the declension of the numerals may be obtained from the following table.

Declension
of the
numerals.

PARADIGMS OF THE DECLENSION OF THE NUMERALS.

| PARAD. | Nom. or Accus. | Gen. or Acc. | Dative. | Instrum. | Prepos. |
|--------|---|--|-----------------------|-----------------------|-----------------------|
| 1. | <i>m. одинъ, n. одна, f. одна, one</i> | (See its declension in the <i>Prænum</i> parat. 15). | | | |
| 2. | <i>m. n. два, f. двѣ, two</i> | двухъ | двумъ | двумѣ | двухъ |
| 3. | <i>m. n. оба, both</i> | обоихъ | обоимъ | обоимъ | обоихъ |
| 4. | <i>три, three</i> | трѣхъ | трёмъ | трёмѣ | трѣхъ |
| 5. | <i>четыре, four</i> | четырёхъ | четыремъ | четыремъ | четырёхъ |
| 6. | <i>два and двѣ, two</i> | двоихъ | двоимъ | двоимъ | двоихъ |
| 7. | <i>четыре and четыре, four</i> | четырёхъ | четыремъ | четыремъ | четырёхъ |
| 8. | <i>пять, five</i> | пяти | пяти | пяти | пяти |
| 9. | <i>всѣмъ, eight</i> | всѣмъ | всѣмъ | всѣмъ | всѣмъ |
| 10. | <i>пятьдесятъ, fifty</i> | пятидесяти | пятидесяти | пятидесяти | пятидесяти |
| 11. | <i>двѣсти, two hundred</i> | двухъ сотъ | двумъ стѣмъ | двумъ стѣмъ | двухъ стѣмъ |
| 12. | <i>настоитъ, live hundred</i> | пяти сотъ | пяти стѣмъ | пяти стѣмъ | пяти стѣмъ |
| 13. | <i>m. n. полтора, one and a half</i> | полтора | полтору | полторомъ | полторѣ |
| 14. | <i>три, по три, 3 s.</i> | по трёмъ | по трёмъ | по трёмъ | по трёмъ |
| 15. | <i>четыре, по четыре, 4 s.</i> | по четырёмъ | по четырёмъ | по четырёмъ | по четырёмъ |
| 16. | <i>полъ, по полу, 1/2</i> | по полу | по полу | по полу | по полу |
| 17. | <i>годъ, по году, 1 year</i> | по году | по году | по году | по году |
| 18. | <i>полтора, по полутора, 1 1/2</i> | по полутора | по полутора | по полутора | по полутора |
| 19. | <i>два, по двумъ, 2</i> | по двумъ | по двумъ | по двумъ | по двумъ |
| 20. | <i>три, по трёмъ, 3</i> | по трёмъ | по трёмъ | по трёмъ | по трёмъ |
| 21. | <i>четыре, по четырёмъ, 4</i> | по четырёмъ | по четырёмъ | по четырёмъ | по четырёмъ |
| 22. | <i>пять, по пяти, 5</i> | по пяти | по пяти | по пяти | по пяти |
| 23. | <i>десять, по десяти, 10</i> | по десяти | по десяти | по десяти | по десяти |
| 24. | <i>сто, по сто, 100</i> | по сто | по сто | по сто | по сто |
| 25. | <i>тысяча, по тысячу, 1000</i> | по тысячу | по тысячу | по тысячу | по тысячу |
| 26. | <i>миллионъ, по миллиону, 1,000,000</i> | по миллиону | по миллиону | по миллиону | по миллиону |

With respect to the *tonic accent* in the declension of the numerals we may remark, that it is generally placed on the inflections of the cases, as happens in all the numerals from *одна* to *десять*, and from *двадцать* to *сто*, as also in *двое*, *трое*, *четыре* and other similar words. The numerals *пять*, *шесть*, &c. as far as *десять*, as also *двадцать* and *тридцать*, while they are declined as feminine nouns in *а*, differ from them in the accent, which is placed on the last vowel in all the cases: *пяти*, *шести*, *десяти*, &c., whilst in the nouns the accent is transposed only in the prepositional case: *въ связи*, *въ тѣни*, &c. The numeral *сорокъ*, which is declined like nouns in *а*, differs from them in the accent; for no dissyllabic noun can, without the elision of the vowel, transfer its accent from the first syllable to the inflection of the cases, as happens in *сорокъ*; *сорока*, *сороку*, &c.

According to the 6th and 7th paradigms (двое and четверо) are declined the similar collective numerals; viz:

| | |
|------------------------------------|-----------------------------|
| 6th par.) Трое and трои, three. | Шестеро and шестеры, six. |
| О'бое and бои, two. | Десятеро and десятеры, ten. |
| 7th par.) Пятеро and пятеры, five. | Сотеро and сотеры, hundred. |

Двое, трое, четверо, &c., are used with the names of animate beings of the masculine and neuter gender; and *двои, трои, четверы*, &c., with the names of inanimate and abstract objects which only occur in the plural; e. g. двое слугъ, *two servants*; трои часы, *three watches*. We may still observe that *обое* had formerly a singular, the genitive, *обоего*, of which is still found in the expression: жители обоего пола, *the natives of both sexes*.

According to the 8th and 10th paradigms (пять and пятьдесят) are declined the similar numbers following, with the exception of *всеми*, which is declined by the 9th paradigm; e. g.

| | |
|--|---|
| 8th par.) Шесть, six, <i>ген.</i> шестѣ. | Тридцать, thirty, <i>ген.</i> тридцатѣ. |
| Семь, seven, семѣ. | Десять, ten, десѣтѣ. |
| Девять, nine, девѣтѣ. | 10th par.) Шестьдесятъ, sixty, шестидесятѣ. |
| Десять, ten, десѣтѣ. | Семьдесятъ, seventy, семидесятѣ. |
| Одиннадцать, eleven, одиннадцѣтѣ. | Восемьдесятъ, eighty, осемидесятѣ. |
| Двадцать, twenty, двадцѣтѣ. | |

The first member *всеми* of the last word is declined according to the 9th paradigm: *ген.* осемидесятѣ, *instr.* восемьюдесѣтью or осемидесятѣю.

According to the 11th and 12th paradigms (двѣсти and пятьсотъ) are declined the following numerals; viz:

| | |
|---|---------------------------------------|
| 11th par.) Триста, three hundred, <i>ген.</i> трѣхъ сотѣ. | Семьсотъ, 700, <i>ген.</i> семи сотѣ. |
| Четыреста, 400, четырёхъ сотѣ. | Восемьсотъ, 800, осемь сотѣ. |
| 12th par.) Шестьсотъ, 600, шести сотѣ. | Девѣтѣсотъ, 900, девѣти сотѣ. |

Двѣсти (instead of *двѣста*) is the Slavonic dual of сто, and was used with два and оба, as we shall see later.

According to the 13th paradigm (полтора) are declined such numerals as are formed of полъ, *the half*, with the apocopated genitive of the ordinal number, with the exception of *полтретья*, which is declined according to the 14th paradigm: e. g.

Получетверта, three and a half, *gen.* полу́четверта; *sem.* полчетверти.
 Полпята, four and a half, . . . полу́пята; . . . полпяти.
 Полшестя, five and a half, . . . полу́шестя; . . . полшести.
 Полдесята, nine and a half, . . . полу́десята; . . . полдесяти.

The compound numeral *полтораста*, a *hundred and fifty* (a *hundred and a half*) forms *полутораста* in all the oblique cases. All these words, however, with the exception of *полтора* and *полтораста*, are antiquated, and no longer used.

According to the 15th and 16th paradigms (*полдень* and *полночь*) are declined such nouns as are formed with the numeral *полъ*, *the half*; e. g.

| | |
|--|---|
| 15th p.) Полночь, midnight, <i>gen.</i> полу́- | Полсло́ва, half a word, <i>gen.</i> полусло́ва. |
| ночи. | [часѣ. Полминуты, half a minute, полу- |
| 16th p.) Полчася, half an hour, полу- | минуты. |
| полдня, half a day, полудня. | Полверсты, half a verst, полуверсты. |
| Полведра, half a pail, полу- | Полфунта, half a pound, полу- |
| ведра. | фунта. |

We must remark that the numeral *полъ* is joined to substantives in the genitive singular, to indicate *a half*, with the exception of *полдень* and *полночь*, which signify *the middle of the day* or *of the night, midday* or *midnight*. All these nouns are declined by joining *полу* to the other cases of the simple substantive. We have still to add that *полдень* takes in the prepositional with *по* the inflection *и* (instead of *ю*); thus we say: *по полудни*, *after noon*. Such nouns as have *полу* in the nominative singular, as *полуостровъ*, a *peninsula*; *полумѣсяцъ*, a *crescent*, are declined like simple substantives.

In the compound cardinal numerals, such as: *двадцать два*, *twenty two*; *тридцать пять*, *thirty five*; *сто шесть*, a *hundred and six*, each number is declined separately; *G.* *двадцати двухъ*, *тридцати пяти*, *ста шести*, &c. But when they form ordinal numerals, such as: *двадцать первый*, *twenty first*; *сто второй*, *hundred and second*, the ordinal number only is declined, and the cardinal numerals remain indeclinable; *G.* *двадцать первого*, *сто второго*. The same is the case with *надесять*, in the compound numbers; e. g. *первый-надесять*, *eleventh*; *второй-надесять*, *twelfth*, where the first part, *первый*, *второй*, is alone declined.

The other numerals follow the declension of the nouns or adjectives to which by their termination they belong. Thus

сорокъ, *forty*; миллионъ, *million*; десятокъ, *ten*, follow the first declensions of substantives (§ 30, *gen.* сорока, миллиона, десятка); сто, *a hundred*, and девяносто, *ninety*, follow the second; while дюжина, *a dozen*; сотня, *a hundred*; тысяча, *a thousand* (*instr. sing.* тысячею and тысячью) are declined according to the third. On this subject we must observe that the numerals сорокъ, сто and девяносто only follow the declension of the substantives when they are used as nouns to express *forties*, *hundreds* and *nineties*, and then сорокъ and сто have also a plural (сороки, сороковъ; ста, сотъ, &c.); but when they are joined to a substantive, or to another numeral, they take in the *dative* and *instrumental* cases singular the inflection of the genitive (сорока, ста, девяноста), and sometimes even in the *prepositional*, especially with another numeral.

The ordinal numerals, which are all adjectives, terminating in *ый*, or *ой* (*neut. ое, fem. ая*), are declined according to the full termination of the adjectives, with the exception of третій (*n. трётъе, f. трётъя*), *third*, which is declined according to the mixed termination (§ 40).

The numerals два, оба, три, четыре, две, трие, четверо, have the accusative like the nominative, when they are with the names of inanimate and abstract objects, and like the genitive, when with the names of animate beings. But all the rest: пять, шесть, семь, двадцать, &c. have always the accusative like the nominative; the same is the case with the numbers два, три, четыре, when joined to tens, hundreds or thousands; as двадцать два, *twenty two*; сто три, *a hundred and three*, &c., even when referring to animate objects; e. g. собрать двадцать два воина (and not двадцать двухъ воиновъ), *to unite twenty two warriors*.

43. — The cardinal numerals, in Russian, when joined with substantives follow various rules unlike those of any other language. These rules are as follows:

1. *Одинъ* agrees with its substantive in gender, number and case, and in the compound numerals, such as, двадцать одинъ, сто одинъ, the substantive is always put in the singular.

Special rules
of the
numerals.

2. The numerals *два, оба, три, четыре* (and their compounds as *двадцать два, сто четыре, &c.*), *полторá, полтретья́*, and others of the same kind, when employed in the nominative or accusative, require the noun to which they belong, to be put in the *genitive singular*, observing that *два, оба, полторá, полтретья́*, agree in *gender* with the noun. If there is an adjective, it takes the gender of the substantive and is put in the *nominative plural*.—With all the other numerals, from *пять*, as also with *деся́те, трое́, четверо́, пятеро́, &c.*, the substantive is put in the *genitive plural*, and if there be an adjective, it agrees with the noun or with the numeral, according to the sense of the phrase. Thus we say: *пе́рвые два больш́ие столá, the two first large tables*; and *сѹ пять больш́ихъ столóвъ, these five large tables*.

This *genitive singular*, which occurs with the numerals *два, три, четыре*, is simply the Slavonic *dual*, which was used with *два* and *оба*, and which has also been retained in *дѣйстви́ (sl. дѣйстви́)*. The numerals *три* and *четыре* were simple adjectives, agreeing with their substantive, while *пять* and the numerals following were considered as collective nouns, always requiring the *genitive plural* after them.

A peculiarity of the Russian language must still be mentioned: it requires the adjective which accompanies the nouns formed of the numerals *полъ* (as *полчасá, półгода*), as also the numerals *полторá, полтретья́*, to be placed in the *nominative plural*: e. g. *пе́рвые полчасá, the first half hour*. But in the other cases the adjective agrees with the substantive; e. g. *въ продол́женіе пе́рваго получасá, in the space of the first half hour*.

3. With the numerals in the oblique cases, the substantive is always put in the plural. *a)* When the numerals have a gender, as: *пятко́, двю́жина, тыся́ча, миллио́нъ*, the noun is always put in the *genitive*, and the same rule applies equally to *соро́къ* and *сто*, when used in the plural. *b)* With the other numerals, such as: *два, оба, три, четыре, пять, соро́къ, девяно́сто, сто, &c.*, the noun agrees with the numeral in *case*. We remark further that in words compounded of two numerals the case of the substantive is determined by the later numeral. Thus we say: *съ тремя́ ста́ми во́иновъ, with three hundred warriors*, and *со ста́ тремя во́инами, with a hundred and three warriors*;

въ сорокъ верстахъ, at forty wersts, and сорокъ сороковъ церквей, one thousand six hundred churches (forty forties).

4. With the preposition *no*, indicating the distribution of an equal quantity, the numerals два, три, четыре, две, трие, четверо, retain the inflection of the nominative, and then the noun is put in the *genitive singular*, but the other numerals are put in the dative (сорокъ, сто and девяносто then take their regular inflection *y*), and the noun is put in the *genitive plural*. Thus we say: по два рубля, по пяти рублѣй, по сороку рублѣй, to each two, five, forty roobles.

The numerals полтора, полтретья, &c., take also with the preposition *no* the inflection *y* of the dative, and the noun in the *genitive singular*: in all other cases the noun and the numeral agree; e. g. по полутора рубль, to each a rooble and a half.

EXERCISES ON THE NUMERALS.

Man has one tongue, one nose, two eyes, У (*gen.*) человекъ (*есть*) одинъ языкъ, одинъ носъ, два глаза, two ears, two cheeks, two arms, two legs, ten fingers два уха, два щека, два рука, два нога, десять палець at the hands and ten toes at the feet, thirty two teeth, на (*prep.*) рука и десять палець на нога, тридцать два зубъ, and seven vertebres. Leap year has four и семь позвонокъ. Въ (*prep.*) високосный годъ (*есть*) четыре seasons, 12 months, 52 weeks and two days, or 366 days, время, 12 мѣсяць, 52 недѣля и два день *m*, или 366 день, or 8784 hours, or 527,040 minutes. The book has a или 8784 часъ, или 527,040 минутъ. Въ (*prep.*) книга (*есть*) hundred leaves less one. The two brothers and the two сто листь безъ (*gen.*) одинъ. Оба братъ и оба sisters. An hour and a half, and a minute and a half. Two сестра. Полтора часъ, и полтора минутъ. Два roobles and a half, and three kopecs and a half. рубль *m* съ (*instr.*) половина и три копейка съ половиною.

The berkovetz has 10 poods; the pood 40 pounds; the
 Въ (*прр.*) берковецъ (*есмь*) 10 пудъ; въ пудъ 40 фунтъ; въ
 pound 32 loths; the loth 3 zolotniks; the pound has 96
 фунтъ 32 лоть; въ лоть 3 золотникъ; въ фунтъ 96
 zolotniks.
 золотникъ.

Two beaver-hats, three silk-handkerchiefs, four pen-
 Два пуховый шляпа, три шелковый платокъ, четыре перо-
 knives, five cups of porcelain, and six magnificent
 чинный ножикъ, пять чашка фарфоровый, и шесть прекрасный
 pictures. These two black crows; these three white feathers;
 картина. Сии два чёрный воронъ; те три белый перо;
 my four new books; these five petulant children. The
 мой четыре новый книга; эти пять рзвый дитя. Оба
 two poor orphan boys, and the two unhappy orphan girls.
 бедный сирота, и оба несчастный сирота.

Two servants, three workmen, four children, six
 Двое слуга, трое мастеровой, четверо дитя, шестеро
 soldiers, two watches, three pairs of spectacles, five pairs
 солдатъ, двои часы *т*, трои очки *т*, пятеры
 of scissors. The first hour and a half. The first forty days;
 ножницы *г*. Первый полтора часъ. Первый сорокъ день;
 the second hundred crowns, and the last thousand florins.
 второй сто ежимокъ, и послѣдній тысяча гульденъ.

I have bought an ox and a horse, a table and
 Я купилъ одинъ быкъ и одинъ лошадь *г*, одинъ столъ и
 a mirror. Twenty one roobles, fifty one
 одинъ зеркало. Двадцать одинъ рубль *т*, пятьдесятъ одинъ
 kopecks. The thousand one nights. A young man of thirty
 копейка. Тысяча и одинъ ночь *г*. Молодой человекъ тридцать
 one years less twenty one days. Do not judge
 одинъ годъ безъ (*ген.*) двадцать одинъ день *т*. Не суди

of a man by a single fault and by a single
 о (*prep.*) человекъ по (*dat.*) одинъ проступокъ и по одинъ
 error. An officer with twenty one soldiers. Peter
 ошибка. Офицеръ съ (*instr.*) двадцать одинъ солдатъ. Петръ
 the First and Catharine the Second reigned in the
 Пётръ I и Екатерина II владѣли въ (*prep.*)
 eighteenth century. The Swedes revere Charles XII, and
 восемнадцатый вѣкъ. Швецы уважаютъ Карла XII, а
 the French have erected a monument to Henry IV. The
 Французы поставили памятникъ Генриху IV.
 article was written on the 15th of the month of January,
 Статья была писана (*gen.*) 15 мѣсяцъ январь м.,
 in the year 1823, and the event relates to the VI
 годъ 1823, и происшествіе относится къ (*dat.*) VI
 century, and particularly to the year 573.
 вѣкъ, а именно къ (*dat.*) годъ 573.

A cupboard with a dozen of plates of porcelain, or
 Шкапъ съ (*instr.*) дюжина тарѣлка фарфоровый, или
 with twelve plates of porcelain. A droshky drawn by
 съ двѣнадцать тарѣлка фарфоровый. Дрожка, запряжённый (*instr.*)
 a pair of bay horses, or by two bay horses; and a carriage
 пара вороной лошади, или два вороной лошади; и карѣта
 drawn by six sorrel horses, or by a team of six
 запряжённый (*instr.*) шесть рыжий лошади, или шестѣрка
 sorrel horses. The town is situated a thousand wersts
 рыжий лошади. Городъ лежитъ въ (*prep.*) тысяча верста
 from here, the village a hundred wersts, and the hamlet forty
 отсюда, село во сто верста, а деревня въ сорокъ
 wersts. At Moscow there were 1600 churches, or forty
 верста. Въ (*prep.*) Москва было 1600 церковь, или сорокъ
 forties of churches. I am satisfied with eighty
 сорокъ церковь. Я довольствуюсь (*instr.*) восемьдесятъ

roobles (or with two forties of roobles) a month, рубль *m* (или два сорокъ рубль) въ (*acc.*) мѣсяцъ, i. e. with 960 roobles a year. He will not live till то есть 960 рубль въ (*acc.*) годъ. Онъ не доживётъ до (*gen.*) forty years; and she died at forty three. She is сорокъ лѣто; и она умерла (*gen.*) сорокъ три лѣто. Она (*estъ*) satisfied with forty kopecs, and she admired a довольный (*instr.*) сорокъ копейка, и она удивилась (*dat.*) hundred pictures. He cannot live on less than a сто картина. Онъ не можетъ прожить меньше (*gen.*) hundred thousand roobles a year. A town with two сто тысяча рубль *m* въ (*acc.*) годъ. Городъ съ (*instr.*) два towers; a chest with six drawers; a house with forty windows; башня; комодъ съ шесть ящикъ; домъ съ сорокъ окно; a fortress with a hundred cannons; a church with five крѣпость *f* со сто пушка; церковь *f* о (*prep.*) пять cupolas; a house of three stories; a village with four глава; домъ о (*prep.*) три ярусъ; деревня съ (*instr.*) тетыре wind-mills. I love equally the two sons and the two вѣтряный мельница. Я люблю равно оба сынъ и оба daughters. He has four children, and she has left five дочь *f*. Онъ имѣетъ четверо дитя, а она оставила пятеро orphans. My brother has not been able to manage these two сиротѣ. Мой братъ не могъ слѣдить съ (*instr.*) этими два restive horses. He has lived long with his five упрямый лошади *f*. Онъ жилъ долго съ (*instr.*) своими пять cousins german. To this million of old Prussian братъ двоюродный. Къ (*dat.*) этому миллионъ старый прусскій crowns must be added a thousand of these new roobles. еѣимокъ надобно прибавить тысяча тѣхъ новый рубль *m*. To each a hundred roobles and forty kopecs. Каждый по (*dat.*) сто рубль *m* и по (*dat.*) сорокъ копейка.

Some months have thirty days
 Въ (*prep.*) нѣкоторымъ мѣсяцъ (*естъ*) по (*dat.*) тридцать день *m*,
 and others thirty one days. In each coachhouse
 а въ другой по тридцать одинъ день. Въ (*prep.*) каждый сарай
 there were two carriages, and in each carriage
 было по (*nom.*) два карѣта, а въ каждый карѣта по (*nom.*)
 three men, and four women. To each a hundred and
 три мужина и по четыре жѣнщина. Каждый по (*dat.*) сто по
 ninety roobles and forty five kopecks. We
 девяносто рубль *m* и по сорокъ по пять копейка. У насъ
 have each twenty seven points. Every part of
 (*естъ*) по (*dat.*) двадцать по семь очки *m*. Каждый часть *f*
 the work is sold at the rate of a rooble and a half of silver.
 сочинѣнiе продаѣтся по (*dat.*) полтора рубль *m* (*instr.*) серебрѣ.

By the morning one must not judge of midday. During
 По (*dat.*) утро не должно судить о (*prep.*) полдень *m*. Въ (*acc.*)
 the first half day he did not know what to do. At
 первый полдня онъ не зналъ что дѣлать. Въ (*acc.*)
 four o' clock in the morning, or at five o' clock in the
 четыре часъ по (*prep.*) полночь *f*, или въ пять часъ по
 afternoon. That happened during the latter half of
 полдень *m*. Это случилось въ (*acc.*) послѣдний полгода
 the year 1844. The first half hour passed quietly. During
 годъ 1844. Первый полчаса прошли спокойно. Въ (*acc.*)
 the space of the first half hour. I had a hundred and
 продолженiе первый полчаса. За мною было полтораста
 fifty thousand roobles of annual revenue.
 тысяча рубль *m* годовоѣ доходъ.

THE PRONOUNS.

Division
of the
pronouns.

44. — The *pronouns* (мѣстоимѣнія) in Russian are divided into seven kinds.

1. The *personal* pronouns (личныя) are, in the first person: я, *I*; plur. мы, *we*; in the second ты, *thou*; plur. вы, *you*; and in the third person онъ, *he* (fem. она, *she*; neut. оно, *it*); plur. они, *they* (fem. онѣ, *they*). There is in Russian another personal pronoun, which is applied to all the three persons and both numbers, and which is used when the action of the object returns on the agent: e. g. я себя знаю, *I know myself*; ты себя бережѣшь, *thou takest care of thyself*; мы себя обманываемъ, *we deceive ourselves*. This is called the *reflected* (возвратное) personal pronoun.

When the reflected pronoun is used at the end of the verbs, it is contracted into *ся* or *сь*; e. g. домъ стрѣтся, *the house is being built*; я моюсь, *I wash myself* (instead of стрѣтъ себя, мою себя).

2. The *possessive* pronouns (притяжательныя) are, in the first person: мой, *my* or *mine*; нашъ, *our* or *ours*; in the second person: твой, *thy* or *thine*: вашъ, *your* or *yours*; and for all the three persons: the reflected свой, *my, thy, his, our, your, their*.

In Russian there is no possessive pronoun for the third person: its place being supplied by the genitive of the personal pronoun: егѡ, *of him* or *his*; ея, *of her* or *her*; ихъ, *of them* or *their*; e. g. я былъ у егѡ брата, *I have been to his brother* (to the brother of him); я знаю ея мужа, *I know her husband* (the husband of her); я это дѣлаю для ихъ дѣтей, *I do that for their children* (for the children of them).

3. The *demonstrative* pronouns (указательныя) are: сей, *this*; тотъ, *that*; оный, *this*; тотъ, *that*; такой, *such*; таковѡй, *such* or *such an one*.

4. The *relative* pronouns (относительныя) are: кто, *who* or *he who*; что, *which* or *that which*; который, *who*; какой, каковой, *who* or *he who*; чей, *whose*; сколько, *how much* or *so much*.

5. The *interrogative* pronouns (вопросительныя) are the same as the relative.

6. The *determinative* (опредѣлительныя) or *ampliative* (дополнительныя) pronouns are: самъ, *self*; весь, *all*; каждый, всякій, *each*. To this class belong also the numerals одинъ, *a single one* or *one only*, and оба, *both*.

The pronouns самъ and сáмый have the same meaning, but the former is used with the personal pronouns and with the names of animate objects, the latter with the demonstrative pronouns and the names of inanimate and abstract objects: e. g. я самъ, *myself*; онъ самъ, *himself*; самогó себя, *one's self*; отецъ самъ, *the father himself*; тотъ сáмый, сей сáмый, *the very same*; сáмая смерть, *death itself*. The pronoun сáмый before a qualifying adjective expresses the superlative (§ 38. 3).

7. The *indefinite* pronouns (неопредѣлённыя) are: нѣкто, *somebody*; нѣчто, *something*; никто, *nobody*; ничто, *nothing*; кто ли́бо, кто нибу́дь, кто-то, кто ни есть, *whoever*; что ли́бо, что нибу́дь, что-то, что ни есть, *whatever*; нѣкій, нѣкакій, нѣкоторый, какой-то, *some*; ни какóй, ни ко́торый, ни одинъ, *not any, none*; другóй, инóй, прóчий, *other*; стóлько, *as much, as far*; нѣсколько, *some*; мно́го, *much*; ма́ло, *little*; другъ дру́га, *each other*; тотъ и дру́гой, *the one and the other*; всякъ, *each*.

45. — The pronouns are either substantive or adjective. 1) The *substantive* pronouns are: я, ты, онъ, себя, кто, что, нѣкто, нѣчто, никто, ничто,

PARADIGMS OF THE DECLENSION OF THE PRONOUNS.

SINGULAR.

Masculine and neuter genders.

PARADIGMS:

| | <i>Nom. or Acc.</i> | <i>G. or A.</i> | <i>Dat.</i> | <i>Inst.</i> | <i>Prep.</i> |
|-----|--|---|---|---|--------------|
| 1. | я, I | меня, me | мнѣ, to me | мною, by me | |
| 2. | ты, thou | тебя, thee | тебѣ, to thee | тобою, by thee | |
| 3. | онъ, he | его, of him | ему, to him | нимъ, by him | |
| 4. | —, himself | себя, of self | себѣ, to self | собою, by self | |
| 5. | кто, who, he who | кого, of whom | кому, to whom | кемъ, by whom | |
| 6. | что, which, that which | чего, of what | чему, to what | чемъ, by what | |
| 7. | моя, my, mine | моего, of mine | моему, to mine | моимъ, by mine | |
| 8. | на, mine, his, hers, its, ours, theirs | нашего, of mine, his, hers, its, ours, theirs | нашему, to mine, his, hers, its, ours, theirs | нашимъ, by mine, his, hers, its, ours, theirs | |
| 9. | моя, my, mine | моего, of mine | моему, to mine | моимъ, by mine | |
| 10. | моя, my, mine | того, of that | тому, to that | темъ, by that | |
| 11. | моя, my, mine | этого, of this | этому, to this | этимъ, by this | |
| 12. | чья, of whom | чьего, of whom | чьему, to whom | чьимъ, by whom | |
| 13. | самъ, self | самого, of self | самому, to self | самимъ, by self | |
| 14. | все, all | всего, of all | всему, to all | всеимъ, by all | |
| 15. | одинъ, one, sole | одного, of one | одному, to one | однимъ, by one | |
| 16. | какой, such as | какого, of such as | какому, to such as | какимъ, by such as | |

Feminine gender.

Nom. G. D. and P. Acc. Inst.

я, I

ты, thou

она, she

въ, in the three persons, the three genders, the three numbers.

моя, my, mine

на, mine, his, hers, its, ours, theirs

чья, of whom

самъ, self

все, all

одинъ, one, sole

какой, such as

PLURAL.

In the three genders.

N. or A. G. A. and P. Dat. Inst.

мы, we

вы, ye

они, they

мы, our, ours

вы, your, yours

они, his, hers, its, ours, theirs

мы, ourselves

вы, yourselves

они, themselves

мы, all

вы, all

они, one, sole

мы, such as

вы, such as

они, such as

The *tonic accent* in the declension of the pronouns is, with some rare exceptions, placed on the terminations of the cases, as is seen in the accompanying paradigms.

of which one only (*она*) has all the three genders; *себя*, *кто*, *что* are the same in both numbers, and *себя* has no nominative. 2) All the other pronouns are *adjective*, and like the adjectives they have three genders, two numbers and seven cases, and agree with the substantive to which they belong.

46. — The substantive pronouns are declined in a peculiar manner as will be seen later. Those of the adjective pronouns which end like the adjectives, in *ый* and *ий* (or *ой*), fem. *ая*, neut. *ое*, such as: *который*, *оный*, *самый*, *каждый*, *таковой*, *всякий*, are declined according to the 1st and 2d paradigms of adjectives (§ 41); while such as have a termination differing from that of the adjectives, such as: *мой*, *наш*, *сам*, *сей*, also *такой* and *какой*, are declined in a particular way.

Declension
of the
pronouns.

The following observations on the declension of pronouns are necessary.

1. The oblique cases of the pronoun of the third person (3d paradigm) take the euphonic letter *н*, when they are preceded by a preposition; e. g. *у него*, *to him*; *къ нему*, *towards him*; *съ нею*, *with her*; *о нём*, *of him*; *безъ нихъ*, *without them*, &c. But this addition does not take place when the genitive *его*, *ей*, *ихъ*, serves as a possessive pronoun; e. g. *въ его домъ*, *in his house*; *къ ихъ пользѣ*, *to their advantage*. — The genitive singular feminine of this pronoun sometimes takes the inflection of the accusative; e. g. *я её не видѣлъ* (instead of *ей*), *I have not seen her*; *у ней* (instead of *у нея*), *to her*, and this inflection is sometimes contracted: *у ней*.

2. According to the 5th and 6th paradigms (*кто* and *что*) are declined the pronouns compounded from *кто* and *что*; e. g. *никто*, *nobody*; *ничто*, *nothing*; *нѣкто*, *кто нибудь*, *кто либо*, *кто-то*, *somebody*; *нѣчто*, *что нибудь*, *что либо*, *что-то*, *something*; remarking that, if there be a preposition with *никто* and *ничто*, it is placed between the particle *ни* and the pronoun;

е. г. ни у кого, *to nobody*; ни къ чему, *to nothing*; ни за что, *for nothing*; ни съ кѣмъ, *with nobody*; and also observing that the parts *нибѣдо*, *либо* and *то* are invariable.

3. According to the 7th paradigm (мой) are declined the pronouns твой, *thy*; свой, *his*, and кой, *who*, observing that this last is not used in the nominative and accusative singular of any of the genders, and that it has the tonic accent in all the cases on the first syllable (кого, кѣмъ, кѣмъ, &c.). Its compound нѣкій, *some*, is declined in the same manner in the singular; but in the plural it takes the inflections of the adjectives: *N. нѣкіе, f. нѣкія; G. нѣкихъ, D. нѣкимиъ, &c.*

4. According to the 8th paradigm (нашъ) is declined the pronoun вашъ, *your*.

5. According to the 16th paradigm (какой) are declined такой, *such*; нѣкакій, *some*, and этакій, *such an one*.

6. The other pronouns which have the adjective termination *ый* and *ій* or *ѣй* (fem. *ая*, neut. *ое*), such as: оный, самый, всякій, другой, иной, каковой, таковой, are declined according to the 1st and 2d paradigms of the adjectives (§ 41). The pronouns каковой and таковой have also the apocopated termination: *какобъ* and *такобъ*. In the pronoun другъ друга, *each other*, which is used for the three genders and both numbers, the first part remains indeclinable, while the second is declined like a substantive; *G. другъ друга, D. другъ другу, A. другъ друга, I. другъ другомъ, P. другъ о другъ*. The pronouns самъ-другъ, *two together*; самъ-третей, *three together*, &c., are indeclinable and are used for all the three persons, the three genders and both numbers.

7. The pronoun *всякъ* is used instead of *всякій человекъ*, but only in the masculine singular. The pronouns *сколько*, *столько*, *нѣсколько*, have in the singular, besides this termination which serves both for the nominative and accusative, only the dative in *у* with the preposition *по* (*по сколько, &c.*); and in the plural they have only the genitive, the dative, the instrumental and the prepositional cases (*сколькоихъ, сколькоимиъ, &c.*).

8. *Одинъ* (parad. 15) is both a numerative and a determinative pronoun. The same is the case with the Slavonic word

единъ (*м. едино, ф. едина*), which is used in an elevated style, and which is declined in the singular like an adjective of the full termination: *Г. единого, единой; Д. единому, &c.*; but in the plural it takes the aprocopated form: *едины, единыхъ, единымъ.*

EXERCISES ON THE PRONOUNS.

I love thee, and thou offendest me. We esteem him, Personal
pronouns.
Я люблю ты, а ты обижаешь я. Я уважаемъ онъ,

as to her, we love her sincerely. I have much money,
а онъ я любимъ душевно. У (*gen.*) я (*есть*) много деньги,
and thou hast not a penny. Protect him, and
а у (*gen.*) ты нетъ ни (*gen.*) копейка. Заступись за (*acc.*) онъ, и
depend upon her. Take a seat with me, and come
понадѣйся на (*acc.*) онъ. Посиди съ (*instr.*) я, и приходи
with him. Tell her, to come to me. Without
съ (*instr.*) онъ. Скажи онъ, чтобъ онъ пришлѣ ко (*dat.*) я. Безъ (*gen.*)
him, without her and without you, life is wearisome to me.
онъ, безъ онъ и безъ ты, жизнь (*есть*) скучный я.

I do not see them, and I will do every thing for them.
Я не вижу онъ, а я сдѣлаю всё для (*gen.*) онъ.

We esteem you, and you have forgotten us. Depend
Я уважаемъ ты, а ты забыли я. Будь увѣренъ
on me; I will speak of thee. It is agreeable to me
во (*prep.*) я; я поговорю о (*prep.*) ты. (*есть*) Пріятно я
to be with her. I do not trust myself, and thou art
быть съ (*instr.*) онъ. Я не доверяю себя, а ты (*есть*)
contented with thyself. We take care of ourselves, and they
довольный (*instr.*) себя. Я бережёмъ себя, а онъ
do themselves harm.
себя вредятъ.

Possessive My brother, thy sister and his son have studied together.
pronouns. Мой братъ, твой сестра и онъ сынъ учились вмѣстѣ.

I try to be agreeable to your master and to our
Я стараюсь угодить вашъ учитель *m* и нашъ
inspector. My house is more beautiful than thine, and
смотритель *m*. Мой домъ (*естъ*) красивый (*gen.*) твой, а
thy dog is less than mine. I live without them,
твой собака (*естъ*) малый (*gen.*) мой. Я живу безъ (*gen.*) онъ,
and I can dispense with their help. Do not boast
и могу обойтись безъ (*gen.*) онъ помощь *f*. Не хвались (*instr.*)
of thy labours, and think of thy years. Draw near
свой трудъ, а подумай о (*prep.*) свой лѣто. Подойди къ (*dat.*)
my table, and give some money to thy sister. We talk
мой столъ, и подарю (*gen.*) деньги *f* твой сестра. Я говоримъ
about our affairs, and you occupy yourself with your lesson.
о (*prep.*) свой дѣло, а ты занимаетесь (*instr.*) свой урокъ.
Study is bitter, but its fruits are sweet. Thy gardens
Ученіе (*естъ*) горькій, но онъ плодъ (*суть*) сладкій. Твой садъ
are superb; I admire their beauties.
(*суть*) прекрасный; я удивляюсь онъ (*dat.*) красотѣ.

Demonstra- Dost thou see this dog and this cat, these men and
tive pro- Видишь ли этотъ собака и этотъ котъ, этотъ люди *m* и
nouns. those trees? In these countries there is no gold; and
тотъ дерево? Въ (*prep.*) этотъ земля нѣтъ (*gen.*) золото; и
in those no silver. I have heard that from
въ (*prep.*) тотъ нѣтъ (*gen.*) серебро. Я слышалъ этотъ отъ (*gen.*)
your brother, but I do not believe it. I praise your
вашъ братъ, но я не вѣрю (*dat.*) этотъ. Я хвалю вашъ
project; it is long since I had foreseen it. Have you
намѣреніе; давно я предвидѣлъ оный. Живешь ли
lived long in this town? I admire this garden,
ты давно въ (*prep.*) сей городъ? Я удивляюсь (*dat.*) этотъ садъ,

but that is more beautiful. These pens are blunt; these
 а тотъ (*естъ*) хоро́шій. Э́тотъ перо́ (*суть*) тупо́й; сей
 houses are of stone; these streets are narrow. Such eyes
 домо́ ка́менный; то́тъ у́лица у́зкій. Тако́й глазо́
 are piercing; such actions do not do honour.
 (*суть*) прои́щательный; тако́й дѣ́лю не прино́сятъ (*ген.*) че́сть.

Such are men.

Таково́й (*суть*) лю́ди *т.*

The relative pronouns agree in *gender* and *number* with the substantive to which they belong, and take the *case* required by the following verb, with the exception of the pronoun *чей*, which agrees in gender, number and case with the accompanying substantive. Relative pronouns.

The man whom you see, is very intelligent.
 Чело́вѣкъ, кото́рый ты ви́дишь, (*естъ*) о́чень у́мный.

The book which you read is very agreeable. I know
 Кни́га, кото́рый ты чита́ешь, (*естъ*) о́чень прі́ятный. Я зна́ю
 the affair of which you speak. The water with which
 дѣ́лю, о (*преп.*) кото́рый ты говори́те. Во́да, (*instr.*) кото́рый

I wash myself, is very cold. Beware of him who
 я мою́сь, (*естъ*) о́чень холо́дный. Береги́сь (*ген.*) то́тъ, кто
 flatters thee. He who has much business,
 льсти́тъ (*dat.*) ты. То́тъ у (*ген.*) кто (*естъ*) мно́го (*ген.*) дѣ́лю,
 does not think of pleasures. Learn that which
 не ду́маетъ о (*преп.*) заба́ва. Учи́тесь (*dat.*) то́тъ, (*ген.*)

you are ignorant of. Here is cloth like that of which I
 что ты не зна́ете. Вотъ (*nom.*) сукно́ тако́й, како́й я
 bought some. Such was the chief, such were the soldiers.
 купи́лъ. Каково́й былъ военача́льникъ, таково́й и во́инъ.

That is the friend, in whose hands is my destiny.
 Вотъ (*nom.*) дру́гъ, въ (*преп.*) че́й рука́ (*естъ*) мой судьба́.

Listen to those in whose house thou hast lived.
 Слу́шайся (*ген.*) то́тъ, въ (*преп.*) че́й домо́ ты жи́лъ.

There is a book (*of those*) such as there are few of, and
 Вотъ книга (*изъ gen. такой*), (*gen.*) какой (*есть*) мало, и
 an opportunity like those are rare.
 случай каковой (*суть*) рѣдкій.

Interroga-
 tive pro-
 nouns.

What o'clock is it, and at what o'clock wilt
 Который часъ (*есть*), и въ (*prep.*) который часъ

thou come? With what books dost thou occupy thyself, and
 придѣшь? (*instr.*) Какой книга занимаешься, и

what people live here? Under what chief
 какой люди *т* живуть здѣсь? Подъ (*instr.*) который начальникъ

dost thou serve, and what language dost thou learn? Whose
 ты служишь, и (*dat.*) какой языкъ ты учишься? Чей

are these houses? By whose permission hast thou
 (*суть*) этотъ домъ? Съ (*gen.*) чей позволеніе ты вышелъ

gone out? I have not seen whose hat has been thrown
 со двора? Я не видѣлъ, чей шляпа брошена

to the ground. I do not know with whose children she
 на (*acc.*) полъ. Я не знаю, съ (*instr.*) чей дитя онъ

is walking. About what dost thou trouble thyself, and
 гуляеть. О (*prep.*) что ты заботишься, и

in what way have I deserved thy friendship? On what
 (*instr.*) что я заслужилъ твою дружбу? Съ (*instr.*) что

can one congratulate thee, and from whom hast thou
 можно поздравить ты, и отъ (*gen.*) кто ты

received this money? How many wersts are there
 получилъ этотъ деньги? Сколько (*gen.*) верста (*есть*) отъ

from this town to that? Of how many volumes
 (*gen.*) этотъ городъ до (*gen.*) тотъ? Изъ (*gen.*) сколько томъ

is this work composed? How many roobles
 сей сочиненіе состоитъ? По (*dat.*) сколько (*gen.*) рубль *т*

will fall to you to each of this profit?
 достанется ты изъ (*gen.*) этотъ прибыль?

Thou thyself wilt be of my opinion: the sound even of his ^{Determinative pronouns.}
 Ты самъ согласишься съ (*instr.*) я: звукъ самый онъ
 voice is agreeable. I take this apartment of the
 голосъ (*estv*) приятный. Я нанимаю сей квартира у (*gen.*)
 proprietor himself. Vices themselves find with you an
 хозяинъ самъ. Порокъ самый находятъ у (*gen.*) ты
 excuse. He always speaks of himself. You are
 извиненіе. Онъ всегда говоритъ о (*prep.*) себя самъ. Ты (*estv*)
 discontented with yourselves. We have seen her herself.
 недовольный (*instr.*) себя самъ. Я видѣли онъ самъ.
 Death itself is not frightful. We all content ourselves
 Смерть *f* самый (*estv*) не страшный. Я весь довольствуемся
 with our only salaries. So think women alone. We
 (*instr.*) одинъ жалованье. Такъ думаютъ женщины одинъ. Я
 two will serve God alone. In each assembly
 оба хотимъ служить (*dat.*) Богъ одинъ. Въ (*prep.*) каждый собраніе
 there were citizens of both sexes. They are scattered
 были гражданъ оба полъ. Онъ (*суть*) разсыяны
 in all the world. One must accustom one's self to
 по (*dat.*) весь свѣтъ. Надобно привыкать къ (*dat.*)
 every food.
 всякій пища.

There is not anybody here; do not ask help of Indefinite
 Нѣтъ (*gen.*) никто здѣсь; не проси (*gen.*) помощь *f* у (*gen.*) ^{Pronouns.}
 anybody. Thou eatest nothing, and that serves no
 никто. Ты не ешь (*gen.*) ничто, и этотъ не годится къ (*dat.*)
 purpose. Learn something, and say that to somebody.
 ничто. Учи (*dat.*) что нибудь, и скажи этотъ кто нибудь.
 I will not sell my house for any thing in the world, and
 Я не продамъ (*gen.*) свой домъ за (*acc.*) ничто, и
 you have sold yours for a mere nothing. Of nothing
 ты продали свой за ничто. Изъ (*gen.*) ничто

one can make nothing. During the space of some
 не сдѣлаешь (*gen.*) ничто́. Въ (*acc.*) течѣніе нѣсколько
 months he has bought every day some
 мѣсяць онъ покупалъ ежеднѣвно по (*dat.*) нѣсколько (*gen.*)
 hundreds of peasants.
 сто душá.

The two sisters speak badly of each other. The

Оба сестра́ говорятъ дурно́ другъ о (*prep.*) другъ.

Englishmen and the French detest each other. We are
 Англичани́нъ и Францу́зъ ненавидя́тъ другъ дру́га. Я

going to take a walk with one another. These houses
 ходи́мъ гуля́ть другъ съ (*instr.*) другъ. Сей домъ

are situated one behind the other. The boards are thrown
 лежа́тъ одинъ за (*instr.*) друго́й. Доска́ (*суть*) набро́саны

one with another.

одинъ съ (*instr.*) друго́й.

THE VERB.

Division of
 verbs.

47. — The *verbs* (глаго́лы) of the Russian language are divided, according to their meaning, into four classes, which are called *voices* (зало́ги), viz:

1. The *active verbs* (дѣйстві́тельные), such as: дѣлать, *to make*; любить, *to love*; мыть, *to wash*; одѣвать, *to clothe*.

2. The *pronominal verbs* (мѣстоимѣнные), formed of active verbs by means of the reflected pronoun *ся*, contracted from *себя́*. These verbs are: *a) reflected* (возвратные), as: мы́ться, *to wash one's self*; одѣва́ться, *to dress one's self*; *b) reciprocal* (взаимные), as: обнима́ться, *to embrace each other*; ссоря́ться, *to dispute with each other*; and *c) common* (общіе), which with the termination of reflected

and reciprocal verbs have an active or neuter meaning, as: боя́ться, *to fear*; сме́яться, *to laugh*.

3. The *neuter* verbs (сре́дние), as: спáть, *to sleep*; сто́ять, *to stand*. To this class also belong the *inchoative* (начи́нательные), as: бѣлѣть, *to whiten, become white*; со́хнутъ, *to dry, become dry*. Among these verbs two are to be distinguished from the rest; viz: the neuter verb бы́ть, *to be*, and the inchoative ста́ть, *to become*, which help to form and conjugate the other verbs, and which on that account are called *auxiliaries* (вспомо́гательные).

4. The *passive* verbs (стра́дательные), as: бы́ть лю́бимымъ, *to be loved*; бы́ть почитáемымъ, *to be venerated*; дѣло сдѣлано, *the thing is accomplished*.

The reflected voice is often used in the passive sense, especially when applied to inanimate objects, e. g. дѣло дѣлается, *the thing is being accomplished*; домъ стро́ится, *the house is being built*.

48. — The principal inflections of the Russian verbs are: *tense* (вре́мя), *aspect* (ви́дъ) and *mood* (накло́неніе), and the secondary inflections are: *person* (лицѣ), *number* (числѣ) and *gender* (родъ). Inflections
of the verb.

49. — The *tenses* of the Russian verbs are only Tenses. three in number: 1) the *present* (настоя́щее вре́мя); 2) the *preterit* (проше́дшее), and 3) the *future* (бу́дущее), as: я чита́ю, *I read*; я чита́лъ, *I have read*; я бу́ду чита́ть, *I shall read*.

50. — Though the Russian verbs have only Aspects. these three tenses, they have other inflections to indicate duration, accomplishment, reiteration, or other circumstances accompanying the action. These shades, or varieties of meaning, to which the Russian grammarians have given the name of *aspects* or

degrees, are expressed by a change of termination or by means of the prepositions. The prepositions, being joined to verbs, form the *prepositional* (предложные) verbs, while such as have no preposition are termed *simple* (простые) or *a-prepositional*. This division of the verbs has an influence on the number and nature of their aspects. The following are the aspects of the Russian verbs.

1. The *imperfect* aspect (несовершенный видъ), which indicates that the action is being, has been, or will be performed without intimating, whether it is or will be finished; e. g. я дѣлаю, *I make*; я дѣлалъ, *I was occupied to make*; я буду дѣлать, *I shall make*; я просматриваю, *I examine*, я просматривалъ, *I set about examining*; я буду просматривать, *I shall examine*. This aspect is subdivided into definite and indefinite.

a) The *definite* (определённый) imperfect aspect indicates that the action is performed at a given moment: e. g. птица летитъ, *the bird flies (is flying now)*; заяцъ бѣжитъ, *the hare runs (is running at this moment)*.

b) The *indefinite* (неопределённый) imperfect aspect expresses the action in an indeterminate manner, without reference to the time when it is performed, and also indicates that the acting person is accustomed to perform, or has the power of performing the action: e. g. птицы летаютъ, *the birds fly (have the power of flying)*; зайцы бѣгаютъ, *the hares run (are accustomed to run)*.

The definite and indefinite meaning of the imperfect aspect is not marked by any particular inflection, except in the case of verbs which express movement or change of place. The

other verbs, having properly speaking only the indefinite imperfect aspect, take the definite meaning without changing their termination; e. g. *Василій теперь пьётъ квасъ*, *Basil is now drinking kvass*; *Василій пьётъ и квасъ и воду, что попадётся*, *Basil drinks both kvass and water, whichever happens to be there*.

2. The *perfect aspect* (совершенный), which indicates that the action has been, or will be entirely finished; e. g. *я сдѣлалъ*, *I have made, I have finished*; *я сдѣлаю*, *I shall make, I shall finish making*; *я просмотрѣлъ*, *I have entirely examined*; *я просмотрю*, *I shall finish examining*. This aspect is subdivided into aspect of duration and aspect of unity.

a) The perfect aspect of *duration* (длительный) indicates that the action has been, or will be performed by many movements, and has had or will have any duration; e. g. *птицы выклевали ему глаза*, *the birds have put out his eyes with beak-strokes*; *я пропою пѣсню*, *I shall sing over this air*.

b) The perfect aspect of *unity* (однократный) indicates that the action has been, or will be performed only once, and has lasted only a moment; e. g. *я зевнулъ*, *I have yawned, I have made a yawn*; *онъ тронетъ ещё разъ ваше хладное сердце*, *he will once more touch your insensible heart*; *птица выклюнула ему глазъ*, *the bird has put out to him an eye*.

3. The *iterative aspect* (многократный), which indicates that the action has been performed repeatedly, and that it is long passed; e. g. *въ молодья лета я живалъ въ деревнѣ*, *in my youth I often lived in the country*.

On the subject of these aspects we have to make the following observations:

1. They are never all found in a single verb, as we shall see later. We merely observe in this place that the imperfect, perfect of unity and iterative aspects are found in the simple verbs, while the perfect of duration is met with in the prepositional and some few simple verbs, enumerated further (§ 65, 8). The aspects of a simple verb are generally distinguished in the following manner: the *definite imperfect* aspect is found in verbs signifying movement; e. g. бѣгѹ, *I run (am running now)*; иду, *I go (am going at this moment)*; the aspect *perfect of unity* is found in verbs which designate a physical action of men or animals, and ends in нуть (preterit нулъ, future ну); e. g. шагнѹть, *to take a step*; кашлянѹть, *to cough once*; the *iterative* aspect usually ends in ывать or ывать (preterit ывалъ or ывалъ); e. g. дѣлывалъ, *he usually made*; говаривалъ, *he said at different times*. The other simple verbs, which have not these distinctive characters, are of the *indefinite imperfect* aspect. All these properties of the verbs will be examined subsequently (§§ 59—65).

2. The prepositions are particles which are joined to verbs to communicate to them the meaning of the completion of an action: e. g. дѣлать, *to make*, and сдѣлать, *to finish making, to have made*; писать, *to write*; and написать, *to finish writing, to have written*; and also to give them a particular meaning; e. g. хотѣть, *to go*, and входить, *to go in*; восходить, *to go up*; выходить, *to go out*; доходить, *to go up to, to attain*, &c.

3. The aspects have not all the same number of tenses; the imperfect aspect is used in all the three tenses; the perfect is employed in the preterit and future, while the iterative is met with only in the preterit.

Moods. 51. — The Russian verbs have only three *moods*, viz: 1) the *indicative* (изъявительное наклонѣніе), e. g. я хожу, *I walk*; мы гуляли, *we have taken a walk*, вы будете ѣздить, *you will sup*; 2) the *imperative* (повелительное), e. g. ходи, *walk*; пойдѣте, *let us go*; гуляйте, *take a walk*; and 3) the

infinitive (неокончательное), e. g. ходить, *to walk*; гулять, *to take a walk*; ўжинать, *to sup.*—The indicative is the only mood which is found in all the tenses and all the aspects, the infinitive has inflections for the aspects, but has no tenses, as is also the case with the imperative, except that it is not used in the iterative aspect.

The *conditional* (предположительное) and *subjunctive* (сочлагательное) moods of other languages are expressed in Russian by the preterit of indicative with the particle *бы*; e. g. я *желалъ бы ѣхать*, *I should wish or I should have wished to depart*; я *бы не думалъ, чтобъ вы это сдѣлали*, *I should not have believed that you would have done that*.

52.—The indicative and imperative of the Russian verbs have further: 1) three inflections for the *persons*, e. g. читаю, *I read*; читаешь, *thou readest*; читаетъ, *he reads*; 2) two for the *numbers*; читаю, *I read*, and читаемъ, *we read*; читаешь, *thou readest*, and читаете, *you read*; читаетъ, *he reads*, and читаютъ, *they read*; читаѣи, *read*, and читаѣите, *read (you)*; and 3) in the singular of the preterits, three for the *genders*, e. g. ученикъ читалъ, *the school-boy read*; дитя читало, *the child read*; служанка читала, *the maid read*.

The preterit of the Russian verbs is nothing but the past participle, in the apocopated form, joined to the substantive verb, which participle, like the attributive adjectives, was used, in the ecclesiastical Slavonic, in the apocopated termination, and with the three genders, e. g. азъ *есмь сотвори́лъ*, *I have created*; умѣла *есѣ*, *thou hast had* (in speaking to a woman). In Russian the auxiliary verb is understood, and we say: я *сотвори́лъ*, ты *имѣла*, and on this account the genders have become an inflection of the preterits.

There are some verbs which are only used in the third person singular, without expressing the person either by a

noun or a pronoun, and which for that reason are called *impersonal* (безличные). These verbs have only the neuter in the preterit; such are: *нѣтъ*, *there is not* (*pret.* нѣ было, *fut.* не будетъ); *разсвѣтаетъ*, *it begins to dawn* (*pret.* разсвѣло, *fut.* разсвѣтъ); *хочется*, *the mind takes* (*pret.* хотѣлось).

Forms deriv-
ed from the
verb.

53.—To complete our examination of all the parts of the Russian verbs, we will still add the forms which are derived from them; these are: 1) the *participle* (причастіе), 2) the *gerund* (дѣепричастіе), and 3) the *verbal noun* (отглагольное имя).

1. The *participles*, as parts of the verb, have voice, aspect and tense; and as adjectives, gender, number and case. As regards *voice*, they are active, neuter or pronominal, and passive; they have the same number of *aspects* as the verbs from which they are derived; but they have only two *tenses*, the present and the preterit.

2. The *gerunds* are simply verbal adverbs, which are formed from the active and neuter participles and can take the different aspects of the present and preterit.

3. The *verbal nouns* are abstract nouns which being derived from the infinitive, indicate the particular action, expressed by the aspect, from which they are formed; e. g. бѣжаніе, *an habitual running*; разбиваніе, *a defeat*; разбиіе, *a complete defeat* (from the infinitives бѣжать, разби́вать and разби́ть).

Conjugation.

54.—The changing of the inflections of the verbs in order to indicate the moods, tenses, numbers, persons and genders, is called *conjugation* (спряженіе); and the verbs are divided, according to the

manner in which they are conjugated, into *regular* (правильные) and *irregular* (неправильные). 1) The *regular* verbs are such as have a polysyllabic infinitive, ending in *мь* preceded by a vowel; e. g. дѣлать, *to make*; гулять, *to take a walk*; имѣть, *to have*; говорить, *to speak*; колѣть, *to sting*; тянуть, *to draw*; терѣть, *to rub*. 2) The *irregular* verbs are such as have a monosyllabic infinitive, ending either in *мь* preceded by a consonant, or in *чь*, *ми* and *шу*; e. g. бить, *to beat*; брать, *to take*; слыть, *to pass for*; вѣсть, *to conduct*; грызть, *to gnaw*; идти, *to go*; сѣчь, *to cut*.—The following remarks on the conjugation of verbs are important.

1. Each aspect of a verb, having necessarily an infinitive, is conjugated separately, without being mixed up with the other aspects of this verb.

2. The *infinitive* in verbs is the same as the nominative in nouns: this mood is the *direct* form, whence all the others, called the *oblique*, are derived. It ends in *мь* (seldom in *чь*, *ми*, *шу*).

3. The *present*, which is only found in the imperfect aspect (either definite or indefinite), ends, in the first person of the singular, in *ю* or *ь* (very rarely in *мъ* and *мо*).

4. The *preterit*, which is found in all the aspects, ends in *лъ* and sometimes in *ѣ* (neut. *ло*, fem. *ла*; plur. *ли*).

5. The *future* has no particular inflection: in the imperfect aspect (either definite or indefinite) it is formed by the help of the auxiliary verbs бѣду or смѣну, joined to the infinitive; and in the perfect aspect (either of duration or of unity) this tense takes the form of the present.

6. The *imperative*, which is found in all the aspects, excepting the iterative aspect, ends, in the second person singular, in *ѹ* with the accent, or, without accent, in *и* after two or three consonants, in *ѵ* after one consonant and in *ѹ* after a vowel.

ACTIVE, NEUTER AND PRONOMINAL.

| SECOND | | | | | THIRD. | |
|--|---|--|--|--|--|--|
| 3rd branch. | 4th branch. | 5th branch. | 6th branch. | 7th branch. | 1st branch. | 2d branch. |
| ис ч нтъ ш ать щ | д нтъ : ѣтъ з ать з нтъ д | т нтъ т ать ѣтъ к ать | е нтъ е ать ѣтъ ж ать | см нтъ см ать ѣтъ см | нуть ереть | |
| у ж ишь ч нтъ ш ишь щ ите ать | жу жу ишь жемъ нть жетъ А ишь жемъ З ите жете ятъ жутъ | чу чу тишь чешъ титъ четъ тимъ чемъ тите чете тятъ чутъ | шу шу сншь мешъ сятъ шетъ снмъ шемъ сите шете сятъ шутъ | шу шу стншь щемъ сятъ шетъ стнмъ щемъ стите щете стятъ шутъ | ну немъ нетъ немъ нете нутъ | ру ремъ ретъ ремъ рете рутъ |
| ж н.гъ ч а.гъ ш и.н щ и.н | А З н.гъ г з а.гъ ѣ.гъ д н.н г з а.н ѣ.н д | н.гъ т а.гъ ѣ.гъ к а.гъ н.н т а.н ѣ.н к а.н | е.н г с а.гъ ѣ.гъ ж а.гъ е.н г с а.н ѣ.н ж а.н | ст н.гъ см а.гъ ѣ.гъ ст ст н.н см а.н ѣ.н ст | н.гъ ѣ.гъ, н.н, а н.н ѣ.н | ер.гъ, ер.н, а ер.н |
| either | definite | or | indefinite) | for | the | three |
| | | | | | | conjugations. |
| ж ѣ ч ѣ ш ѣте щ ѣте | А З ѣ ѣ ѣте ѣте ѣте ж ѣте | ѣ ѣ ѣ ѣ ѣте ѣте ѣте ч ѣте | с ѣ ш ѣ ѣ с ѣте ш ѣте ѣте ѣте | стн щн стн щн стате щите | н ѣ н ѣ н ѣте н ѣте | рн рн гѣте |

Regular verbs.

55.—The *regular* verbs are divided into three *conjugations*, according to the ending of the infinitive and the formation of the first person of the present.

1. The *first* conjugation embraces the verbs ending in the infinitive in *mb* with one of the vowels *a*, *я* or *н*, and of which the first person singular of the present is in *ю* with a vowel. This conjugation is subdivided into four *branches*, viz:

| | 1st branch. | 2d branch. | 3rd branch. | 4th branch. |
|-------------|-------------|----------------------|-------------|-------------|
| Infinitive: | ать . . . | о е вать . . . | ять . . . | ѣть |
| Present: | аю . . . | ю ю . . . | яю . . . | ѣю |

Examples: 1) дѣлать, to make, дѣлаю; 2) рисовать, to draw, рисую; плавать, to swim, плаваю; 3) гулять, to take a walk, гуляю; 4) имѣть, to have, имѣю.

2. The *second* conjugation embraces such verbs as end in the infinitive in *mb* preceded by *u* or *o*, and by other vowels with a changeable consonant, and the first person in the present of which is in *ю* preceded by a consonant (sometimes by a vowel) or, according to the nature of the hissing letters, in *ну*, *чу*, *шу* and *жу*. This conjugation is subdivided into 7 *branches*, in the following order:

| | 1st br. | 2d br. | 3rd br. | 4th br. | 5th br. | 6th br. | 7th br. |
|-------------|-------------------------|--------------------------|-----------------------|-------------------------|-------------------------|-------------------------|------------------------------|
| Infinitive: | о н ѣть о ф | нть мъть пять ф | ж нть шъть щ | л нть зъть ать | т нть къть ать | с нть хъть ать | нть стъть скъть ать |
| Present: | ю . . | лю . . | у . . | жу . . | чу . . | шу . . | жу . . |

Examples: 1) говорить, to speak, говорю; велѣть, to order, велю; колоть, to sting, колю; 2) любить, to love, люблю; терпѣть,

to suffer, терпѣю; дремать, to slumber, дремлю; 3) тужить, to grieve, тужу; кричать, to cry, кричу; 4) водить, to lead, вожу; видѣть, to see, вижу; мазать, to anoint, мажу; 5) платить, to pay, плачу; вертѣть, to turn, верчу; плакать, to weep, плачу; 6) просить, to ask, прошу; висѣть, to be suspended, виси; пахать, to cultivate, пашу; 7) чистить, to clean, чищу; хрустѣть, to crack, хрущу; искать, to seek, ищу.

3. The *third* conjugation embraces the verbs ending in the infinitive in *нѣтъ* and in *есть*, the first person of which is in *ѣ* preceded by a palatal consonant (*и, р*). This conjugation is subdivided into 2 branches, thus:

| | 1st branch. | 2d branch. |
|-----------------------|----------------|------------|
| Infinitive: | нѣтъ | есть |
| Present: | нѣ | еѣ |

Examples: 1) тянѣть, to draw, тяну; 2) терѣть, to rub, тру.

The three conjugations of the regular verbs and their various branches, as also the inflections of the moods, tenses and persons, are shown in the preceding table (pages 120 sq.).

56.—In the conjugation of the regular verbs the following rules relating to the formation of the various inflections are to be attended to.

Formation
of the in-
flections of
the verb.

1. The *second person* of the present is formed: *a*) from the first person in all the verbs of the 1st and IIIrd conjugation, as also in those of the IIrd in *омѣ*, and in *амѣ* when not preceded by a hissing consonant, by changing *ю* or *ѣ* into *еѣ*; *b*) from the infinitive in the verbs of the IIrd conjugation ending in *нѣтъ*, *нѣтъ*, and in *амѣ* preceded by a hissing consonant, by changing *нѣтъ*, *нѣтъ* or *амѣ* into *нѣѣ*. The other persons are formed from the second. The present has generally the following inflections:

| PERSONS: | 1. 2. 3. 4. | | | |
|--|-------------|------|-----|-----------|
| | SINGULAR. | | | |
| 1. | ю | у | ю | у |
| 2. | еишь | еишь | ишь | ишь |
| 3. | еть | еть | ишь | ишь |
| | PLURAL. | | | |
| | | | | |
| 1. | емъ | емъ | имъ | имъ |
| 2. | ете | ете | ите | ите |
| 3. | ють | ють | ятъ | ятъ (атъ) |
| <p>For verbs of the I conjug. and for those in <i>омъ</i>, 1st br. and in <i>амъ</i>, 2d br. of the II conj. (See the parad. 1, 2, 3, 4, 5, 6, 7, 10 and 12.)</p> <p>For verbs of the III conjug. and for those in <i>амъ</i>, 4th, 5th, 6th and 7th br. of the II conj. (See the paradigms 15, 17, 19, 21, 22, 23, 24 and 25.)</p> <p>For verbs of the II conjug. 1st and 2d br. (except those in <i>омъ</i> and in <i>амъ</i>). (See the paradigms 8, 9, and 11.)</p> <p>For verbs of the II conjug., 3rd, 4th, 5th, 6th and 7th br. (except those in <i>амъ</i> not preceded by a hissing letter). (See the paradigms 13, 14, 16, 18 and 20.)</p> | | | | |

The third person of the plural ends in *амъ* (instead of *ямъ*) after the hissing consonant (ж, ч, ш, щ), and this for the verbs of the third branch of the II conj. (See paradigm 13).

2. The *preterit* in verbs of the I st and II d conjugation is formed from the infinitive by changing *ть* into *лъ* (*фем. ла, neut. ло; plur. ли*). The inchoative verbs of the III d conjugation syncopate the termination *нулъ* into *ъ* (*фем. ла, neut. ло; plur. ли*), by suppressing the consonant *л* in the masculine, when no vowel immediately precedes; e. g. *сохъ, вялъ* (*фем. сохла, вяла, neut. сохло, вяло*), instead of *сохнулъ, вянулъ*, from *сохнуть, to dry; вянуть, to fade*. Occasionally the full form is used: e. g. *мёрзнуть, to freeze, мёрзнулъ*; but in the inchoative prepositional verbs, the preterit is almost always syncopated, and this sometimes happens also in the aspect perfect of unity; e. g. *замёрзнуть, to freeze, замёрзъ, воздвигнуть, to erect, воздвигъ* (instead of *замёрзнулъ, воздвигнулъ*).

The non-inchoative verbs, as also the perfect aspect of unity, retain the termination *нулъ*; e. g. *тянулъ, двинулъ*, from *тянуть, to draw; двинуть, to move once*. The verbs of the 2d branch of the III d conjugation also syncopate the termination of the preterit. (See the paradigms 22, 23, 24 and 25.)

3. The *imperative* ends in the second person of the singular in *й, в, и* or *уй*, and is formed from the second person of

the present (or from the future, in the perfect aspect of duration or of unity), by changing *еиѣ* or *иѣи*:

a) into *ѣ*, if the accent is on the termination of the infinitive (paradigms 8, 10, 11, 12, 15, 16, 18, 19, 21, 22);

b) into *ѣ*, if the accent is not on the termination of the infinitive (paradigms 13, 14, 17 and 24);

c) into *и*, if, without having the accent, the termination of the inf. is preceded by two or three consonants (paradigms 20 & 23);

d) into *ѣ*, if the inflection *еиѣ* or *иѣи* of the second person is preceded by a vowel (paradigms 1, 2, 3, 4, 5, 6, 7 and 9). The verbs in *иѣи* preceded by a vowel, and with the accent on the last syllable, also take the inflection *ѣ*, e. g. таиѣ, to hide; поиѣ, to water; клеиѣ, to paste; imper.: тай, пои, клеи.

The second person of the plural is formed by adding the syllable *ме* to the inflection of the second person of the singular. The other persons have no peculiar inflection. The first person of the plural takes that of the future; e. g. будемъ учиѣся, let us study; поидѣмъ, let us go, and sometimes adding the syllable *ме*, поидѣмѣ. The third person in both numbers takes that of the present or the future, preceded by the conjunctions *пусть* or *да*, e. g. пусть говориѣтъ, let him speak; да здравствуѣтъ, let him live; да будутъ, let them be.

The second person singular of the imperative is sometimes used with the personal pronouns of the first and third person, in order to express the conditional mood; e. g. сдѣлай это я, if I should do that; сдѣлай это онъ, if he were to do that; instead of *сдѣлай бы я* (or *онъ*) *это сдѣлалъ*. In the same manner the phrases: сохрани Богъ, God preserve! дай Богъ, God grant! take the place of the optative mood.

Rem. There are some regular verbs which deviate slightly from the general rules, undergoing a trifling change either in the 1st person of the pres., or in the imper., as we shall subsequently point out. We remark lastly that there is but one verb which has its imper. in *ѣ*; it is the irregular verb *лечь*, to lie down; imper.: лягъ, pl. лягѣте.

57.—Observing these different rules for the formation of the moods, tenses and persons, the active, neuter and pronominal regular Russian verbs are conjugated according to the 25 following paradigms.

Paradigms
of the con-
jugations of
regular
verbs.

PARADIGMS OF THE THREE CONJUGATIONS.

| CONJUGATIONS: | BRANCHES: | PARADIGMS: | I. INFINITIVE. | | II. INDICATIVE. | | | | | |
|---------------|-----------|------------|----------------------------------|---|---|---|---|---|---|---|
| | | | | | I. PRESENT. | | | | | |
| | | | | | Singular. | | | Plural. | | |
| FIRST | 1. | 1. | дѣлать, to make. | дѣлаю, дѣла-ешь, етъ; емъ, ете, ютъ. | дѣлаю, дѣла-ешь, етъ; емъ, ете, ютъ. | дѣлаю, дѣла-ешь, етъ; емъ, ете, ютъ. | дѣлаю, дѣла-ешь, етъ; емъ, ете, ютъ. | дѣлаю, дѣла-ешь, етъ; емъ, ете, ютъ. | дѣлаю, дѣла-ешь, етъ; емъ, ете, ютъ. | дѣлаю, дѣла-ешь, етъ; емъ, ете, ютъ. |
| | | 2. | толковать, to explain. | толкую, толку-ешь, етъ; емъ, ете, ютъ. | толкую, толку-ешь, етъ; емъ, ете, ютъ. | толкую, толку-ешь, етъ; емъ, ете, ютъ. | толкую, толку-ешь, етъ; емъ, ете, ютъ. | толкую, толку-ешь, етъ; емъ, ете, ютъ. | толкую, толку-ешь, етъ; емъ, ете, ютъ. | толкую, толку-ешь, етъ; емъ, ете, ютъ. |
| | | 3. | воевать, to war. | воюю, вою-ешь, етъ; емъ, ете, ютъ. | воюю, вою-ешь, етъ; емъ, ете, ютъ. | воюю, вою-ешь, етъ; емъ, ете, ютъ. | воюю, вою-ешь, етъ; емъ, ете, ютъ. | воюю, вою-ешь, етъ; емъ, ете, ютъ. | воюю, вою-ешь, етъ; емъ, ете, ютъ. | воюю, вою-ешь, етъ; емъ, ете, ютъ. |
| | | 4. | жевать, to chew. | жую, жу-ешь, етъ; емъ, ете, ютъ. | жую, жу-ешь, етъ; емъ, ете, ютъ. | жую, жу-ешь, етъ; емъ, ете, ютъ. | жую, жу-ешь, етъ; емъ, ете, ютъ. | жую, жу-ешь, етъ; емъ, ете, ютъ. | жую, жу-ешь, етъ; емъ, ете, ютъ. | жую, жу-ешь, етъ; емъ, ете, ютъ. |
| | | 5. | гулять, to take a walk. | гуляю, гуля-ешь, етъ; емъ, ете, ютъ. | гуляю, гуля-ешь, етъ; емъ, ете, ютъ. | гуляю, гуля-ешь, етъ; емъ, ете, ютъ. | гуляю, гуля-ешь, етъ; емъ, ете, ютъ. | гуляю, гуля-ешь, етъ; емъ, ете, ютъ. | гуляю, гуля-ешь, етъ; емъ, ете, ютъ. | гуляю, гуля-ешь, етъ; емъ, ете, ютъ. |
| | | 6. | сѣять, to sow. | сѣю, сѣ-ешь, етъ; емъ, ете, ютъ. | сѣю, сѣ-ешь, етъ; емъ, ете, ютъ. | сѣю, сѣ-ешь, етъ; емъ, ете, ютъ. | сѣю, сѣ-ешь, етъ; емъ, ете, ютъ. | сѣю, сѣ-ешь, етъ; емъ, ете, ютъ. | сѣю, сѣ-ешь, етъ; емъ, ете, ютъ. | сѣю, сѣ-ешь, етъ; емъ, ете, ютъ. |
| | | 7. | желтѣть, to grow yellow. | желтѣю, желтѣ-ешь, етъ; емъ, ете, ютъ. | желтѣю, желтѣ-ешь, етъ; емъ, ете, ютъ. | желтѣю, желтѣ-ешь, етъ; емъ, ете, ютъ. | желтѣю, желтѣ-ешь, етъ; емъ, ете, ютъ. | желтѣю, желтѣ-ешь, етъ; емъ, ете, ютъ. | желтѣю, желтѣ-ешь, етъ; емъ, ете, ютъ. | желтѣю, желтѣ-ешь, етъ; емъ, ете, ютъ. |
| SECOND | 1. | 8. | хвалить, to praise. | хвалю, хвал-и-шь, итъ; имъ, ите, ятъ. | хвалю, хвал-и-шь, итъ; имъ, ите, ятъ. | хвалю, хвал-и-шь, итъ; имъ, ите, ятъ. | хвалю, хвал-и-шь, итъ; имъ, ите, ятъ. | хвалю, хвал-и-шь, итъ; имъ, ите, ятъ. | хвалю, хвал-и-шь, итъ; имъ, ите, ятъ. | хвалю, хвал-и-шь, итъ; имъ, ите, ятъ. |
| | | 9. | строить, to build. | строю, стрѣ-и-шь, итъ; имъ, ите, ятъ. | строю, стрѣ-и-шь, итъ; имъ, ите, ятъ. | строю, стрѣ-и-шь, итъ; имъ, ите, ятъ. | строю, стрѣ-и-шь, итъ; имъ, ите, ятъ. | строю, стрѣ-и-шь, итъ; имъ, ите, ятъ. | строю, стрѣ-и-шь, итъ; имъ, ите, ятъ. | строю, стрѣ-и-шь, итъ; имъ, ите, ятъ. |
| | | 10. | колоть, to sting. | колю, колѣ-и-шь, итъ; имъ, ите, ютъ. | колю, колѣ-и-шь, итъ; имъ, ите, ютъ. | колю, колѣ-и-шь, итъ; имъ, ите, ютъ. | колю, колѣ-и-шь, итъ; имъ, ите, ютъ. | колю, колѣ-и-шь, итъ; имъ, ите, ютъ. | колю, колѣ-и-шь, итъ; имъ, ите, ютъ. | колю, колѣ-и-шь, итъ; имъ, ите, ютъ. |
| | 2. | 11. | любить, to love. | люблю, люб-и-шь, итъ; имъ, ите, ятъ. | люблю, люб-и-шь, итъ; имъ, ите, ятъ. | люблю, люб-и-шь, итъ; имъ, ите, ятъ. | люблю, люб-и-шь, итъ; имъ, ите, ятъ. | люблю, люб-и-шь, итъ; имъ, ите, ятъ. | люблю, люб-и-шь, итъ; имъ, ите, ятъ. | люблю, люб-и-шь, итъ; имъ, ите, ятъ. |
| | | 12. | дремать, to slumber. | дремлю, дрем-л-и-шь, етъ; емъ, ете, ютъ. | дремлю, дрем-л-и-шь, етъ; емъ, ете, ютъ. | дремлю, дрем-л-и-шь, етъ; емъ, ете, ютъ. | дремлю, дрем-л-и-шь, етъ; емъ, ете, ютъ. | дремлю, дрем-л-и-шь, етъ; емъ, ете, ютъ. | дремлю, дрем-л-и-шь, етъ; емъ, ете, ютъ. | дремлю, дрем-л-и-шь, етъ; емъ, ете, ютъ. |
| | 3. | 13. | мучить, to torment. | мучу, муч-и-шь, итъ; имъ, ите, ятъ. | мучу, муч-и-шь, итъ; имъ, ите, ятъ. | мучу, муч-и-шь, итъ; имъ, ите, ятъ. | мучу, муч-и-шь, итъ; имъ, ите, ятъ. | мучу, муч-и-шь, итъ; имъ, ите, ятъ. | мучу, муч-и-шь, итъ; имъ, ите, ятъ. | мучу, муч-и-шь, итъ; имъ, ите, ятъ. |
| | | 14. | ладить, to tune. | лажду, лад-и-шь, итъ; имъ, ите, ятъ. | лажду, лад-и-шь, итъ; имъ, ите, ятъ. | лажду, лад-и-шь, итъ; имъ, ите, ятъ. | лажду, лад-и-шь, итъ; имъ, ите, ятъ. | лажду, лад-и-шь, итъ; имъ, ите, ятъ. | лажду, лад-и-шь, итъ; имъ, ите, ятъ. | лажду, лад-и-шь, итъ; имъ, ите, ятъ. |
| | 4. | 15. | вязать, to tie. | вязу, вѣз-и-шь, етъ; емъ, ете, утъ. | вязу, вѣз-и-шь, етъ; емъ, ете, утъ. | вязу, вѣз-и-шь, етъ; емъ, ете, утъ. | вязу, вѣз-и-шь, етъ; емъ, ете, утъ. | вязу, вѣз-и-шь, етъ; емъ, ете, утъ. | вязу, вѣз-и-шь, етъ; емъ, ете, утъ. | вязу, вѣз-и-шь, етъ; емъ, ете, утъ. |
| | | 16. | платить, to pay. | платю, плат-и-шь, итъ; имъ, ите, ятъ. | платю, плат-и-шь, итъ; имъ, ите, ятъ. | платю, плат-и-шь, итъ; имъ, ите, ятъ. | платю, плат-и-шь, итъ; имъ, ите, ятъ. | платю, плат-и-шь, итъ; имъ, ите, ятъ. | платю, плат-и-шь, итъ; имъ, ите, ятъ. | платю, плат-и-шь, итъ; имъ, ите, ятъ. |
| | 5. | 17. | плакать, to weep. | плачу, плач-и-шь, етъ; емъ, ете, утъ. | плачу, плач-и-шь, етъ; емъ, ете, утъ. | плачу, плач-и-шь, етъ; емъ, ете, утъ. | плачу, плач-и-шь, етъ; емъ, ете, утъ. | плачу, плач-и-шь, етъ; емъ, ете, утъ. | плачу, плач-и-шь, етъ; емъ, ете, утъ. | плачу, плач-и-шь, етъ; емъ, ете, утъ. |
| | | 18. | просить, to ask. | прошу, прос-и-шь, итъ; имъ, ите, ятъ. | прошу, прос-и-шь, итъ; имъ, ите, ятъ. | прошу, прос-и-шь, итъ; имъ, ите, ятъ. | прошу, прос-и-шь, итъ; имъ, ите, ятъ. | прошу, прос-и-шь, итъ; имъ, ите, ятъ. | прошу, прос-и-шь, итъ; имъ, ите, ятъ. | прошу, прос-и-шь, итъ; имъ, ите, ятъ. |
| | 6. | 19. | писать, to write. | пишу, пиш-и-шь, етъ; емъ, ете, утъ. | пишу, пиш-и-шь, етъ; емъ, ете, утъ. | пишу, пиш-и-шь, етъ; емъ, ете, утъ. | пишу, пиш-и-шь, етъ; емъ, ете, утъ. | пишу, пиш-и-шь, етъ; емъ, ете, утъ. | пишу, пиш-и-шь, етъ; емъ, ете, утъ. | пишу, пиш-и-шь, етъ; емъ, ете, утъ. |
| | | 20. | чистить, to clean. | чищу, чист-и-шь, итъ; имъ, ите, ятъ. | чищу, чист-и-шь, итъ; имъ, ите, ятъ. | чищу, чист-и-шь, итъ; имъ, ите, ятъ. | чищу, чист-и-шь, итъ; имъ, ите, ятъ. | чищу, чист-и-шь, итъ; имъ, ите, ятъ. | чищу, чист-и-шь, итъ; имъ, ите, ятъ. | чищу, чист-и-шь, итъ; имъ, ите, ятъ. |
| THIRD | 1. | 21. | искать, to seek. | ищу, ищ-и-шь, етъ; емъ, ете, утъ. | ищу, ищ-и-шь, етъ; емъ, ете, утъ. | ищу, ищ-и-шь, етъ; емъ, ете, утъ. | ищу, ищ-и-шь, етъ; емъ, ете, утъ. | ищу, ищ-и-шь, етъ; емъ, ете, утъ. | ищу, ищ-и-шь, етъ; емъ, ете, утъ. | ищу, ищ-и-шь, етъ; емъ, ете, утъ. |
| | | 22. | тянуть, to draw. | тяну, тян-и-шь, етъ; емъ, ете, утъ. | тяну, тян-и-шь, етъ; емъ, ете, утъ. | тяну, тян-и-шь, етъ; емъ, ете, утъ. | тяну, тян-и-шь, етъ; емъ, ете, утъ. | тяну, тян-и-шь, етъ; емъ, ете, утъ. | тяну, тян-и-шь, етъ; емъ, ете, утъ. | тяну, тян-и-шь, етъ; емъ, ете, утъ. |
| | | 23. | сохнуть, to dry. | сохну, сохн-и-шь, етъ; емъ, ете, утъ. | сохну, сохн-и-шь, етъ; емъ, ете, утъ. | сохну, сохн-и-шь, етъ; емъ, ете, утъ. | сохну, сохн-и-шь, етъ; емъ, ете, утъ. | сохну, сохн-и-шь, етъ; емъ, ете, утъ. | сохну, сохн-и-шь, етъ; емъ, ете, утъ. | сохну, сохн-и-шь, етъ; емъ, ете, утъ. |
| | | 24. | выцѣлѣть, to fade. | выцѣлѣю, выцѣлѣ-и-шь, етъ; емъ, ете, утъ. | выцѣлѣю, выцѣлѣ-и-шь, етъ; емъ, ете, утъ. | выцѣлѣю, выцѣлѣ-и-шь, етъ; емъ, ете, утъ. | выцѣлѣю, выцѣлѣ-и-шь, етъ; емъ, ете, утъ. | выцѣлѣю, выцѣлѣ-и-шь, етъ; емъ, ете, утъ. | выцѣлѣю, выцѣлѣ-и-шь, етъ; емъ, ете, утъ. | выцѣлѣю, выцѣлѣ-и-шь, етъ; емъ, ете, утъ. |
| THIRD | 2. | 25. | тереть, to rub. | тру, трѣ-и-шь, етъ; емъ, ете, утъ. | тру, трѣ-и-шь, етъ; емъ, ете, утъ. | тру, трѣ-и-шь, етъ; емъ, ете, утъ. | тру, трѣ-и-шь, етъ; емъ, ете, утъ. | тру, трѣ-и-шь, етъ; емъ, ете, утъ. | тру, трѣ-и-шь, етъ; емъ, ете, утъ. | тру, трѣ-и-шь, етъ; емъ, ете, утъ. |

With respect to the use of the *tonic accent* in the conjugations of regular verbs, the following rules are to be observed.

1. The first person of the present takes the accent of the infinitive, with the exception of the verbs in *оаѣтъ* and *еаѣтъ*, in which the last syllable is accented. These verbs transfer the accent on the penultima, if this termination belongs to a derivative verb; but if the syllable *оа* or *еа* belongs to the root of the verb, they preserve the accent on the last syllable; thus *толковать*, *воевать* (parad. 2 and 3) have in the present *толкую*, *воюю*; while *жевать* (parad. 4) has *жую*; and also *ковать*, *to forge*, *кую*; *плевать*, *to spit*, *плюю*. The other persons of the present preserve the accent of the first person, with the exception of several verbs of the II^d and III^d conjugation, accented on the last syllable, which transfer the accent on the penultima in the second and other persons of the singular and plural. (See the paradigms 8, 10, 11, 12, 15, 16, 18, 19, 21 and 22.)

GATIONS OF REGULAR VERBS.

| CATIVE. | | | | III. IMPERATIVE. | |
|--|--------------|-------------|-------------------|------------------|-------|
| II. PRETERIT. | | | | 2d pers. | |
| Singular. | | | Plural. | Sing. | Plur. |
| <i>masc.</i> | <i>neut.</i> | <i>fem.</i> | <i>3 genders.</i> | | |
| дѣлалъ. | аю. | ала; . . . | дѣлали. | дѣлай. | йте. |
| толковалъ. | аю. | ала; . . . | толковали. | толкуй. | ите. |
| воевалъ. | аю. | ала; . . . | воевали. | воюй. | ите. |
| жевалъ. | аю. | ала; . . . | жевали. | жуй. | ите. |
| гулялъ. | аю. | ала; . . . | гуляли. | гуляй. | ите. |
| сѣялъ. | аю. | ала; . . . | сѣяли. | сѣй. | ите. |
| желтелъ. | аю. | ала; . . . | желтели. | желтай. | ите. |
| <i>и, ты, онъ (и, онъ, f. онъ)</i> | | | | | |
| хвалилъ. | аю. | ала; . . . | хвалили. | хвали. | ите. |
| строилъ. | аю. | ала; . . . | строили. | строй. | ите. |
| колѣлъ. | аю. | ала; . . . | колѣли. | колѣй. | ите. |
| любилъ. | аю. | ала; . . . | любили. | любй. | ите. |
| дремалъ. | аю. | ала; . . . | дремали. | дремай. | ите. |
| мучилъ. | аю. | ала; . . . | мучили. | мучь. | ите. |
| лѣдилъ. | аю. | ала; . . . | лѣдили. | лѣдь. | ите. |
| вязалъ. | аю. | ала; . . . | вязали. | вяжй. | ите. |
| платилъ. | аю. | ала; . . . | платили. | платй. | ите. |
| плѣкалъ. | аю. | ала; . . . | плѣкали. | плѣчь. | ите. |
| просилъ. | аю. | ала; . . . | просили. | просй. | ите. |
| писалъ. | аю. | ала; . . . | писали. | пиши. | ите. |
| чистилъ. | аю. | ала; . . . | чистили. | чисти. | ите. |
| искалъ. | аю. | ала; . . . | искали. | ищи. | ите. |
| <i>я, мы, онъ (и, онъ, f. онъ)</i> | | | | | |
| танулъ. | аю. | ала; . . . | танули. | тани. | ите. |
| сохъ. | аю. | ала; . . . | сохли. | сохни. | ите. |
| вѣлъ. | аю. | ала; . . . | вѣли. | вѣнь. | ите. |
| тѣрѣлъ. | аю. | ала; . . . | тѣрѣли. | трѣ. | ите. |
| <i>и, ты, онъ (и, онъ, f. онъ)</i> | | | | | |
| <i>буду or сѣну (сѣнъ, сѣнь, сѣну, сѣнь)</i> | | | | | |

2. The preterit retains the accentuation of the infinitive, and that in all the inflections, excepted *родить*, to bring forth, *прѣд. родилъ, f. родила, и. родило, пл. родили*, and some verbs of the IIIrd conjugation, which, as well as the irregular verbs, follow the rules of adjectives in the apocopated termination, i. e. the accent is often transferred to the last syllable, sometimes only in the feminine gender, and at other times in the neuter and in the plural, as we shall see later.

3. The accentuation of the imperative is above indicated in the formation of this mood.

4. The pronominal verbs preserve the accentuation of the active verbs; however some of these verbs transfer the accent to the reflected pronoun *ся*, as *родился, he is born, заперся, it shut itself up*; but that happens only in the masculine gender; in the feminine and neuter, as well as in the plural, the accent is placed on the syllable which precedes the pronoun (*родилась, заперлась, &c.*). This transferring happens above all in the monosyllable verbs, as *звался, вѣлся, дался, &c.*

First conjugation.

According to the 1st paradigm (дѣлать) are conjugated verbs in *амь*, as well simple as prepositional (with the exception of those in *оамь* and *еамь*, which belong to the three following paradigms, and of several in *амь*, which are of the second conjugation). Such are:

| | |
|---|--|
| Болтать, to shake, <i>pres.</i> болтаю. | Уповать, to hope, <i>pres.</i> уповаю. |
| Выпять, to crown, выпчаю. | Обожать, to adore, обожаю. |
| Дерзать, to dare, дерзаю. | Отвѣчать, to answer, отвѣчаю. |
| Думать, to think, думаю. | Объщать, to promise, общаю. |
| Ласкать, to caress, ласкаю. | Отдѣлывать, to finish, отдѣлываю. |
| Пытать, to assay, пытаю. | Усматривать, to perceive, усматриваю. |
| Печатать, to print, печатаю. | Закрывать, to cover, закрываю. |
| Работать, to work, работаю. | Надмевать, to render proud, надмеваю. |
| Питать, to nourish, питаю. | Обуревать, to agitate, обуреваю. |
| Нюхать, to smell, нюхаю. | Отмщевать, to avenge, отмщеваю. |
| Терзать, to worry, терзаю. | Здороваться, to salute, здороваюсь. |
| Умничать, to subtilize, умничаю. | Касаться, to concern, касаюсь. |
| Ужасать, to terrify, ужасаю. | Намѣряться, to purpose, -ваюсь. |

Also давать, to give, as the prepositional verbs узнавать, to know; доставать, to procure (and with other prepositions) and создавать, to build, which have in the present: даю, узнаю, достаю and создаю, and in the imperative: дай, узнай, доставай and создавай. — Some prepositional verbs in *ивать*, e. g. показывать, to show; указывать, to indicate; помазывать, to anoint; исповѣдывать, to confess, belong also to the following branch, having the present tense in *иваю* and in *ую*: показываю and показую, помазываю and помазую, &c.

According to the 2nd paradigm (толковать) are conjugated verbs in *овать* (with the exception of *уповать* and *здороваться* which belong to the precedent paradigm), which have in the present *ую*, observing that those in *овать* accented on the last syllable transfer the accent to *у*, if this termination belongs to a derivative verb, but they preserve it on the last syllable, if the syllable *ов* belongs to the root of the verb. Such are:

| | |
|---|--|
| Ворковать, to soo, <i>pres.</i> воркую. | Зимовать, to winter, <i>pres.</i> зимую. |
| Торговать, to traffic, торгую. | Именовать, to name, именую. |
| Баловать, to cocker, балую. | Цѣловать, to kiss, цѣлую. |
| Ковать, to forge, кою. | Рисовать, to draw, рисую. |
| Сновать, to warp, сную. | Образовать, to form, образую. |
| Совать, to shove, сую. | Радовать, to rejoice, радую. |

Требовать, to require, *pres.* требую. Привѣтствовать, to welcome, *pres.*
 Чувствовать, to feel, чувствую. привѣтствую.
 Советовать, to counsel, советую. Повиноваться, to obey, повиннѣ-
 Миловать, to have pity, милую. юсь.

According to the 3d paradigm (воевать) are conjugated verbs in *евать* (with the exception of those in *евать* preceded by a hissing consonant, which belong to the following paradigm, and of *надмевать*, *обуреывать*, *отмущевать* and *наимпреваться*, which belong to the first paradigm), which have in the present *юю*, with the same observation relatively to the tonic accent as for verbs in *овать*. Such are:

Горевать, to grieve, *pres.* горюю. Клевать, to peck, *pres.* клюю.
 Дневать, to pass the day, дняю. Плевать, to spit, плюю.
 Утреневать, to pass the morning, Блевать, to vomit, блюю.
 Малевать, to paint, маляю. [-нюю. Пек-левать, to bolt, пекляю.

According to the 4th paradigm (жевать) are conjugated verbs in *евать* preceded by a hissing consonant (ж, ч, ш, щ), which have in the present *юю* (instead of *юю*); such are:

Врачевать, to cure, *pres.* врачую. Тушевать, to wash a drawing, *pres.*
 Кочевать, to nomadize, кочую. тушую.
 Ночевать, to pass the night, ночую. Хвощевать, to rub with horse-tail,
 Межевать, to survey, межую. хвощую.
 Бушевать, to howl, бушую. Потчевать, to regale, потчую.

This last verb is also written *подчивать*, and then it belongs to the first branch, having in the present: *подчиваю*.

According to the 5th paradigm (гулять) are conjugated all the verbs in *ать* preceded by a consonant, as well simple as prepositional, and also four simple verbs in *ать* preceded by a vowel, and some prepositional verbs in *оать*, in which *ать* is contracted from *уать*. These verbs have the present in *аю*. Such are:

Валать, to roll, *pres.* валию.* Утолять, to quench, *pres.* утоляю.
 Вонять, to stink, воняю. Извинять, to excuse, извиняю.
 Кашлять, to cough, кашляю. Повѣрять, to verify, повѣряю.
 Мѣнять, to change, мѣняю. Утомлять, to fatigue, утомляю.
 Козырять, to trump, козыряю. Ваять, to sculpture, ваяю.
 Кривлять, to contort, кривляю. Зѣять, to gape, зѣяю.
 Терять, to lose, теряю. Паять, to solder, паяю.
 Стрѣлять, to shoot, стрѣляю. Сіять, to shine, сіаю.
 Являть, to show, являю. Устроить, to arrange, устраюю.
 Кланяться, to salute, кланяюсь. Удвойть, to double, удваиваю.

According to the 6th paradigm (сѣять) are conjugated verbs in *ять* preceded by a vowel (with the exception of those which belong to the precedent paradigm, and of *стоять* and *боиться*, which belong to the first branch of the II^d conjugation). They have the present in *ю*; such are:

| | |
|------------------------------------|-----------------------------------|
| Бѣать, to speak, <i>pres.</i> бѣю. | Тѣать, to thaw, <i>pres.</i> тѣю. |
| Блѣять, to bleach, блѣю. | Чѣать, to hope, чѣю. |
| Вопѣять, to cry, вопѣю. | Чѣять, to hear, чѣю. |
| Вѣять, to blow, вѣю. | Кѣаться, to do penance, кѣюсь. |
| Грѣять, to croak, грѣю. | Мѣяться, to languish, мѣюсь. |
| Лѣбѣять, to cocker, лѣбѣю. | Смѣяться, to laugh, смѣюсь. |

According to the 7th paradigm (желѣть) are conjugated the inchoative and some other verbs in *ѣть*, which have the present in *ѣю*, (the non-inchoative in *ѣть* belong to the various branches of the second conjugation). Such are:

| | |
|--|---|
| Бѣлѣть, to grow white, <i>pres.</i> бѣлѣю. | Рыжѣть, to grow rufous, <i>pres.</i> рыжѣю. |
| Голубѣть, to become azure, голубѣю. | Грубѣть, to grow harsh, грубѣю. |
| Соловѣть, to grow light bay, соловѣю. | Чернѣть, to grow black, чернѣю. |
| Рабѣть, to become freckled, рабѣю. | Потѣть, to sweat, потѣю. |
| Краснѣть, to grow red, краснѣю. | Пламенѣть, to flame, пламенѣю. |
| Владѣть, to possess, владѣю. | Колѣть, to starve, колѣю. |
| Глазѣть, to gaze, глазѣю. | Коснѣть, to linger, коснѣю. |
| Говѣть, to keep fast, говѣю. | Печатлѣть, to impress, печатлѣю. |
| Долѣть, to overcome, долѣю. | Имѣть, to have, имѣю. |
| Жалѣть, to have pity, жалѣю. | Умѣть, to know, умѣю. |
| Синѣть, to grow blue, синѣю. | Радѣть, to take care, радѣю. |
| Сѣдѣть, to grow grey, сѣдѣю. | Болѣть, to ache, болѣю. |

The verb *болѣть* belongs also to the first branch of the II^d conjugation, having in the present *болѣю* and *болѣю*, *болѣешь* and *болѣишь*, &c. — The prepositional verb *выздоровѣть*, to recover (perfect aspect of *выздоровѣливать*), belongs also to the second branch of the II^d conjugation, having in the future *выздоровѣю* and *выздоровѣю*, but only in the first person, the others being: *выздоровѣешь*, *еть*, &c.

Second
conjugation.

According to the 8th paradigm (хвалѣть) are conjugated verbs in *ѣть* preceded by a palatal consonant (л, н, р), and also by another consonant, as those, non-inchoative, in *лѣть*, *нѣть*, *рѣть*, observing that several verbs of the second conjugation, accented in the infinitive and in the first person of the present on the last syllable, transfer the accent to the penultima in the second and other persons of the present. Such are:

| | |
|---|--|
| Бранить, to scold, <i>pres.</i> браню, бранишь. | Коймить, to edge, <i>pres.</i> коймю, -ишь. |
| Веселить, to divert, веселю, веселишь. | Клеймить, to stamp, клеймю, -ишь. |
| Винить, to accuse, виню, винишь. | Гудить, to fiddle, гудю, гудишь. |
| Вѣрить, to believe, вѣрю, вѣришь. | Дудить, to pipe, дудю, дудишь. |
| Говорить, to speak, говорю, говоришь. | Мерзить, to abhor, мерзю, мерзишь. |
| Смолить, to pitch, смолю, смолишь. | Тузить, to cuff, тузю, тузишь. |
| Дѣлить, to divide, дѣлю, дѣлишь. | Кудесить, to juggle, кудесю, кудесяшь. |
| Скоблить, to scrape, скоблю, скоблишь. | Чудесить, to behave oddly, чудесю, чудесяшь. |
| Дразнить, to provoke, дразню, дразнишь. | Велѣть, to order, велю, велишь. |
| Хоронить, to hide, хороню, хоронишь. | Горѣть, to burn, горю, горяшь. |
| Курить, to smoke, курю, куришь. | Звѣчать, to sound, звеню, звенишь. |
| Варить, to boil, варию, варишь. | Смотрѣть, to look, смотрю, смотришь. |

And also **МЫСЛИТЬ**, to think, which changes *c* into *ш* in the first person of the present: **мышлю**, **мыслишь**, &c.: *imperative*: **мысли**; and the prepositional verb **ИЗОСТРИТЬ**, to sharpen (perfect aspect of *изошарить*), which changes *ст* into *ш* in the first person of the future: **изошрю**, **изошришь**, &c.

According to the 9th paradigm (**СТРОИТЬ**) are conjugated verbs in **ить** preceded by a vowel, as the two simple verbs in **ОАТЬ**, observing that the verbs in **ить** of this branch, accented on the last syllable, have the imperative in **и**. Such are:

| | |
|---|---|
| Двойть, to double, <i>pres.</i> двою; <i>imp.</i> двои. | Стоить, to cost, <i>pres.</i> стою; <i>imp.</i> стой. |
| Дойть, to milk, дою; дой. | Своить, to appropriate, свою; свой. |
| Клейть, to glue, клею; клей. | Покойть, to give repose, покою; покой. |
| Пойть, to give to drink, пою; пой. | Ройться, to swarm, рою; ройся. |
| Кройть, to cut, крою; крой. | Стайться, to fly in flocks, стаюсь; стайся. |
| Струить, to pour, струю; струй. | Бойться, to fear, боюсь; бойся. |
| Тайть, to hide, таю; тай. | Стойть, to stand, стою; стой. |

According to the 10th paradigm (**КОЛОТЬ**) are conjugated verbs in **оть**, as two verbs in **ать**; these are:

| | |
|---|--|
| Бороть, to vanquish, <i>pres.</i> борю, борешь. | Пороть, to rip, <i>pres.</i> порю, порешь. |
| Бороться, to wrestle, борюсь, боритесь. | Глаголать, to say, глаголю, глаголюсь. |
| Полоть, to weed, полю, полешь. | Орать, to plough, орю, орешь. |

And also **МОЛОТЬ**, to grind, which has in the present: **мелю**, **мелешь**, &c. and in the imperative **мели** (instead of **молю**, **милешь**, **молй**, not to be confounded with **молю**, **молитесь**,

МОЛІ, from МОЛІТЬ, *to pray*). — The verb *оуа́тъ* in the sense of *to cry* belongs to the third conjugation.

According to the 11th paradigm (ЛЮБИ́ТЬ) are conjugated verbs in *итъ* preceded by a labial consonant (б, в, м, п, ф), as the non-inchoatives in *бѣтъ, мѣтъ, пѣтъ*, which insert the consonant *л* in the first person of the present (with the exception of *кле́имъ* and *ко́имъ*, which belong to the first branch of the II d conjugation, of *и́мѣтъ* and *у́мѣтъ*, which belong to the 4th branch of the 1st conjugation, and of *шѣбѣтъ*, which belongs to the first branch of the III d conjugation). Such are:

| | |
|---|---|
| Рубѣтъ, to hew, <i>pres.</i> рублю́, руби́шь. | Рѣзѣтъся, to sport, <i>pres.</i> рѣзвлю́сь, рѣзвѣ́шься. |
| Знобѣтъ, to chill, зноблю́, зноби́шь. | Скорбѣтъ, to sorrow, скорблю́, рби́шь. |
| Грубѣтъ, to be saucy, грублю́, груби́шь. | Свербѣтъ, to itch, сверблю́, сверби́шь. |
| Ловѣтъ, to catch, ловлю́, лови́шь. | Гремѣтъ, to thunder, гремлю́, греми́шь. |
| Готовѣтъ, to prepare, готовлю́, гото́вьшь. | Шумѣтъ, to racket, шумлю́, шуми́шь. |
| Дымѣтъ, to smoke, дымлю́, дыми́шь. | Кипѣтъ, to boil, киплю́, кипи́шь. |
| Кормѣтъ, to nourish, кормлю́, корми́шь. | Корѣтъ, to work, корплю́, корпи́шь. |
| Топѣтъ, to heat, топлю́, топи́шь. | Сопѣтъ, to wheeze, соплю́, сопи́шь. |
| Лѣпѣтъ, to mould, лѣплю́, лѣпи́шь. | Скрипѣтъ, to creak, скриплю́, скрипи́шь. |
| Граѣтъ, to rule, граплю́, графи́шь. | Терпѣтъ, to suffer, терплю́, терпи́шь. |
| Траѣтъ, to hit, траплю́, трафи́шь. | Храпѣтъ, to snore, храплю́, храпи́шь. |
| Нравѣтъся, to please, нравлюсь, нрави́шься. | Храпѣтъ, to croak, храплю́, хрпи́шь. |
| | Шипѣтъ, to hiss, шиплю́, шипи́шь. |

And also the prepositional verb *умертвѣтъ*, *to put to death* (perfect aspect of *умерщвля́тъ*), which changes *т* into *щ* in the first person of the future: *умерщвлю́, умертви́шь, &c.*

According to the 12th paradigm (ДРЕМА́ТЬ) are conjugated verbs in *бать, мать, пать*, which insert also the consonant *л* in the first person of the present, and retain it in the other persons as in all the inflections derivated from this first person. These are:

| | |
|--|---|
| Зыбѣтъ, to wave, <i>pres.</i> зыблю́, зыбле́шь. | And thus the following verbs which belong also to the 1st branch of the first conjugation. [Зобѣаю. |
| Колебѣтъ, to shake, колеблю́, колебле́шь. | Зобѣтъ, to peck up, <i>pres.</i> зоблю́, зобѣаю. |
| Клепѣтъ, to impute, клеплю́, кле́плешь. | Капѣтъ, to drop, ка́плю and ка́паю. |
| Трепѣтъ, to scutch, треплю́, трѣплешь. | Крапѣтъ, to dash, кра́плю and кра́паю. |
| Щепѣтъ, to chirp, щеплю́, щѣплешь. | Хромѣтъ, to be lame, хромлю́ and хрома́ю. |
| Щипѣтъ, to pinch, щиплю́, щиплешь. | |
| Сыпѣтъ, to strew, сыплю́, сы́плешь (<i>imper.</i> сыпь, instead of <i>сыпалъ</i>). | |

And also *имѣть*, to take, which now is used only with a preposition, as *принимать*, to receive, *pres. приѣмлю* and *принимая*, and with other prepositions.

According to the 13th paradigm (*мѣчить*) are conjugated verbs in *ить* and *ать* with a hissing consonant (ж, ч, ш, щ), as one verb in *ить* (with the exception of the verbs in *ать*, which belong in the first conjugation). Such are:

| | |
|--|---|
| <i>Нѣжить</i> , to nurse, <i>pres. нѣжу</i> , нѣ- жишь. | <i>Сушить</i> , to dry, <i>pres. сушѹ</i> , сушишь. |
| [<i>дружить</i>]. | <i>Лежать</i> , to lie, лежѹ, лежишь. |
| <i>Дружить</i> , to make friends, дружѹ, | <i>Держать</i> , to hold, держѹ, держишь. |
| <i>Корчить</i> , to shrivel, корчѹ, корчишь. | <i>Кричать</i> , to cry, кричѹ, кричишь. |
| <i>Страшить</i> , to frighten, страшѹ, стра- пашь. | <i>Молчать</i> , to be silent, молчѹ, молчишь. |
| <i>Вощать</i> , to wax, вошѹ, вощишь. | <i>Стучать</i> , to knock, стучѹ, стучишь. |
| <i>Лощить</i> , to gloss, лошѹ, лощишь. | <i>Пышать</i> , to burn, пышѹ, пышишь. |
| <i>Служить</i> , to serve, служѹ, служишь. | <i>Дышать</i> , to breathe, дышѹ, дышишь. |
| <i>Лечить</i> , to cure, лечѹ, лечишь. | <i>Пищать</i> , to pipe, пишѹ, пищишь. |
| <i>Учить</i> , to teach, учѹ, учишь. | <i>Трещать</i> , to burst, трещѹ, трещишь. |
| | <i>Кашить</i> , to swarm, кашѹ, кашишь. |

According to the 14th paradigm (*лѣдить*) are conjugated verbs in *ить* and *зить*, as well as the non-inchoatives in *ѣть* (with the exception of *гудѣть*, *дудѣть*, *мерзѣть*, *тузѣть* and some others, which belong to the first branch of this second conjugation); these verbs change *ѣ* and *з* into *ю* in the first person of the present. Some verbs in *ить* have retained the Slavonian change of *ѣ* into *ю* in the first person of the present. Such are:

| | |
|--|--|
| <i>Вредѣть</i> , to hurt, <i>pres. врежѹ</i> , вре- дѣшь. | <i>Узѣть</i> , to narrow, <i>pres. уужѹ</i> , узнишь. |
| <i>Глѣдить</i> , to even, глѣжѹ, глѣдишь. | <i>Морозѣть</i> , to freeze, морѡжѹ, морѡ- зишь. |
| <i>Щадѣть</i> , to spare, щадѹ, щадѣшь. | <i>Возѣть</i> , to carry, вожѹ, возишь. |
| <i>Родѣть</i> , to bring forth, рождѹ, родишь. | <i>Вѣдѣть</i> , to see, вѣжѹ, (<i>impr.</i> вѣдъ and вѣждѣ). |
| <i>Лудѣть</i> , to tin, лужѹ, лудишь. | <i>Глядѣть</i> , to look, гляжѹ, глядишь. |
| <i>Нудѣть</i> , to compel, нужѹ, нудишь. | <i>Сидѣть</i> , to sit, сѣжѹ, сѣдишь. |
| <i>Будѣть</i> , to waken, бужѹ, будишь. | <i>Смердѣть</i> , to stink, смержѹ, смер- дѣшь. |
| <i>Водѣть</i> , to lead, вожѹ, водишь. | <i>Убѣдѣть</i> , to persuade, <i>ful.</i> убѣждѹ, убѣдишь. |
| <i>Сердѣть</i> , to anger, сержѹ, сердѣшь. | <i>Наградѣть</i> , to reward, награждѹ, наградѣшь. |
| <i>Судѣть</i> , to judge, сужѹ, судишь. | <i>Возбудѣть</i> , to excite, возбуждѹ, возбудишь. |
| <i>Ходѣть</i> , to go, хожѹ, ходишь. | [упредѣшь]. |
| <i>Грузѣть</i> , to lade, грузжѹ, грузишь. | <i>Упредѣть</i> , to prevent, упреждѹ, |
| <i>Близѣть</i> , to approach, ближѹ, бли- зишь. | |
| <i>Грозѣть</i> , to menace, грожѹ, грозишь. | |
| <i>Низѣть</i> , to lower, нѣжѹ, нѣзишь. | |

According to the 15th paradigm (вяза́ть) are conjugated some verbs in *завь*, *завь* and *давь*, which change *з*, *д* and *д* into *ж* for all the persons of the present, as well as for the inflections formed from this tense. These are:

| | |
|---|---|
| Мазать, to anoint, <i>pres.</i> мажу, мажешь. | Глодать, to gnaw, <i>pres.</i> гложу, глодешь. |
| Рэзать, to cut, рэжу, рэжешь. | And thus the following verbs which belong also to the 1st br. of 1st. conjug. |
| Казать, to show, кажу, кажешь. | Двигать, to move, двигаю and двигаю. |
| Казаться, to seem, кажусь, кажешься. | Тягаться, to be at law, тяжусь and тягаюсь. |
| Нвязать, to thread, нвжу, нвжешь. | Стругать, to plane, стружу and строгая (instead of <i>емругаю</i>). |
| Лязать, to lick, ляжу, ляжешь. | |
| Брызгать, to splash, брызжу, брызжешь. | |

According to the 16th paradigm (плати́ть) are conjugated verbs in *туть*, as well as the non-inchoatives in *туть* (with the exception of some verbs in *туть* which belong to the 20th paradigm), which change *т* into *ч* in the first person of the present. Such are:

| | |
|--|--|
| Винти́ть, to screw, <i>pres.</i> винчу, винтишь. | Кати́ть, to roll, <i>pres.</i> качу, катишь. |
| Золоти́ть, to gild, золочу, золотишь. | Молоти́ть, to thrash, молочу, молотишь. |
| Заботи́ть, to busy, забочу, заботишь. | Свети́ть, to light, свечу, светишь. |
| Порти́ть, to spoil, порчу, портишь. | Шути́ть, to joke, шучу, шутишь. |
| Мути́ть, to muddy, мучу, мутишь. | Колоти́ть, to knock, колочу, колотишь. |
| Крути́ть, to twist, кручу, крутишь. | Верти́ть, to turn, верчу, вертишь. |
| Мѣяти́, to aim, мѣчу, мѣтишь. | Лети́ть, to fly, летчу, летишь. |
| Трати́ть, to spend, трачу, тратишь. | Пыхти́ть, to puff, пыхчу, пыхтишь. |

According to the 17th paradigm (пла́кать) are conjugated several verbs in *тать* and *кать*, which change *т* and *к* into *ч* for all the persons of the present, and for the inflections formed from this tense. Such are.

| | |
|---|--|
| Прати́ть, to hide, <i>pres.</i> прічу, прічешь [бормочешь]. | Кудати́ть, to cackle, <i>pres.</i> кудачу, кудачешь. |
| Бормоти́ть, to murmur, бормочу, бормочешь. | Кли́кать, to call, кличу, кличешь. |
| Лепети́ть, to chatter, лепечу, лепечешь. | Скака́ть, to leap, скачу, скачешь. |
| Топта́ть, to tread town, топчу, топчешь [побчешь]. | Тыка́ть, to thrust, тычу, тычешь. |
| Хлопотати́ть, to bustle, хлопочу, хлопочешь. | And thus the following verbs which belong also to the 1st branch of the first conjugation. |
| Хохотати́ть, to laugh aloud, хохочу, хохочешь. | Алка́ть, to long, алчу and алкаю. |
| Шептати́ть, to whisper, шепчу, шепчешь. | Ика́ть, to hiccup, ичу and икаю. |
| Щекотати́ть, to tickle, щечочу, щечешь. | Хны́кать, to sob, хнычу and хныкаю. |
| | Метати́ть, to cast, метчу and метаяю. |

According to the 18th paradigm (просить) are conjugated verbs in *суть* (with the exception of *кудѣсуть* and *чудѣсуть* which belong to the first branch of the II d conjugation), and also one non-inchoative in *сѣть*, which change *с* into *ш* in the first person of the present. Such are:

| | |
|---|---|
| Вѣсѣть, to black, <i>pres.</i> вѣкшу, вѣсѣшь. | Трусѣть, to be afraid, <i>pres.</i> трушу, трусишь. |
| Вѣсить, to weigh, вѣшу, вѣсишь. | Росѣть, to bedew, росну, росишь. |
| Квѣсѣть, to leaven, квѣшу, квѣсишь. | Гасѣть, to put out, гасну, гасишь. |
| Красѣть, to colour, красну, красишь. | Мѣсѣть, to knead, мѣну, мѣсишь. |
| Косѣть, to mow, косну, косишь. | Носѣть, to bear, носну, носишь. |
| Бѣсѣть, to madden, бѣшу, бѣсишь. | Висѣть, to hang, висну, висишь. |

According to the 19th paradigm (писѣть) are conjugated some verbs in *сѣть* and *хѣть*, which change *с* and *х* into *ш* for all the persons of the present, as well as for the inflections formed of this tense. These are:

| | |
|--|--|
| Писѣть, to dance, <i>pres.</i> пляшу, плясишь. | And thus the two following verbs which belong also to the 1st branch of the first conjugation. |
| Поясѣть, to gird, пояшу, поясишь. | Колыхѣть, to swing, <i>pres.</i> колышу and колыхаю. |
| Тесѣть, to hew, тешу, тѣсишь. | Махѣть, to fan, машу, махѣшь and махаю. |
| Чесѣть, to comb, чешу, чѣсишь. | |
| Брѣхѣть, to yell, брѣшу, брѣсишь. | |
| Пахѣть, to plough, пашу, пахѣшь. | |

According to the 20th paradigm (чистить) are conjugated verbs in *суть* and the non-inchoatives in *сѣть*, which change *сѣ* into *ш* in the first person of the present. Some verbs in *нѣть*, which have retained the Slavonian change of *н* into *ш*, belong also to this paradigm. Such are:

| | |
|---|---|
| Грустить, to grieve, <i>pres.</i> грущу, грустишь. | Прѣтѣть, to forbid, <i>pres.</i> прѣщу, прѣтишь. |
| Гостѣть, to visit, гощу, гостишь. | Святѣть, to sanctify, свящу, святишь. |
| Крестѣть, to christen, крещу, крѣстишь. | Сытѣть, to satiate, сыщу, сытишь. |
| Мостѣть, to floor, мощу, мостишь. | Хитѣть, to ravish, хищу, хитишь. |
| Честѣть, to treat, чешу, чѣстишь. | Посѣтѣть, to visit, <i>fut.</i> посѣщу, посѣтишь. |
| Блестѣть, to shine, блещу, блестяишь. | Укротѣть, to appease, укрощу, кро-тишь. |
| Свистѣть, to whistle, свищу, свистѣишь. | Сократѣть, to shorten, сокращу, со-кратишь. |
| Хрустѣть, to cranch, хрущу, -стишь. | Просвѣтѣть, to enlighten, просвѣщу, просвѣтишь. |
| Простѣть, to pardon, <i>fut.</i> прощу, про-стишь. | Возвратѣть, to return, возвращу, воз-вратишь. |
| Пустиѣть, to let go, <i>fut.</i> пущу, пу-стишь. | |
| Богаѣть, to enrich, <i>pres.</i> богащу, бо-гаѣишь. | |

The verbs *простить*, *пустить*, *послать* and following, are the perfect aspects of *прощать*, *пускать*, *посылать*, *укрощать*, *сокращать*, *просвещать*, *возвращать*; thus the inflections *прощу*, *пущу*, *посещу*, *укрощу*, &c., are future tenses.

According to the 21st paradigm (*искать*) are conjugated some verbs in *скать* and *стать*, as well as four verbs in *тать*, which change *ск* and *ст*, or *т*, into *щ* for all the persons of the present, and for the inflections formed of this tense. These are:

| | |
|--|--|
| Плескать, to splash, <i>pres.</i> плещу́, плеще́шь. | Скрежетать, to gnash, <i>pres.</i> скрежещу́, скрежеще́шь. |
| Рыскать, to run, <i>рыщу́, рыще́шь.</i> | Трепетать, to tremble, <i>трепещу́, трепеще́шь.</i> |
| Полоскать, to rinse, <i>полощу́, полоще́шь.</i> | |
| Свистать, to whistle, <i>свищу́, свище́шь.</i> | And thus the two following verbs which belong also to the 1st branch of the first conjugation. |
| Хлестать, to lash, <i>хлещу́, хлеще́шь.</i> | Блестать, shine, <i>блещу́, блеще́шь</i> and <i>блестяю́.</i> |
| Хвостать, to brush, <i>хвощу́, хвоще́шь.</i> | |
| Клеветать, to slander, <i>клеветчу́, клевете́шь.</i> | Прыскать, to sprinkle, <i>прыщу́</i> and <i>прыскаю́.</i> |
| Роптать, to murmur, <i>ропщу́, ропще́шь.</i> | |

Third conjugation.

According to the 22d paradigm (*тянуть*) are conjugated verbs in *нуть*, as well as four verbs in *ать* and one in *нть*, which have in the present *у*, observing that some of these verbs, accented on the last syllable in the first person of the present, transfer the accent to the penultima in the second and other persons of the present. The perfect aspect of unity belongs also to this paradigm, but the form *ну* of these verbs is a future tense. Such are:

| | |
|---|--|
| Тонуть, to sink, <i>pres.</i> тону́, то́нень. | Кинуть, to cast, <i>fut.</i> кину́, кине́шь. |
| Ряхнуться, to be crazed, <i>рахну́сь, ряхне́шься.</i> | Вернуть, to turn, <i>верну́, верне́шь.</i> |
| Жажда́ть, to desire, <i>жажду́, жа́ждень.</i> | Свистну́ть, to whistle, <i>сви́счу, сви́снень.</i> |
| Ора́ть, to cry, <i>ору́, оре́шь.</i> | Гряться, to thunder, <i>гряну́, гряне́шь.</i> |
| Соса́ть, to suck, <i>сосу́, сосе́шь.</i> | Гляну́ть, to look, <i>гляну́, глянéшь.</i> |
| Стона́ть, to groan, <i>стону́, стоне́шь.</i> | Двину́ть, to move, <i>двину́, двине́шь.</i> |
| Реве́ть, to roar, <i>реву́, реве́шь.</i> | Обману́ть, to cheat, <i>обману́, обма́нень.</i> |

The verb *стона́ть* belongs also to the first branch of the 1st conjugation, having in the present: *стону́, стоне́шь*, and *стона́ю, стона́ешь*, &c. The verb *ора́ть*, in the sense of *plough*, belongs to the first branch of the IIId conjugation.

According to the 23d and 24th paradigms (сѡхнѹть and вѣнѹть) are conjugated the inchoative verbs in нѹть, which in the preterit syncopate the termination нѹ.лѡ in ѡ if this termination is preceded by a consonant, and in лѡ if it is preceded by a vowel (neut. лѡ, fem. лѡ). Such are:

| | |
|--|---|
| Блѣкнѹть, to fade, <i>pret.</i> блѣкѹ, клѡ, клѡ. | Пѡхнѹть, to smell, <i>pret.</i> пѡхѹ, хлѡ, хлѡ. |
| Зѡбнѹть, to freeze, зѡбѹ, блѡ, блѡ. | Мѡкнѹть, to grow wet, мѡкѹ, клѡ, клѡ. |
| Кѣснѹть, to turn sour, кѣсѹ, слѡ, слѡ. | Вѣзнѹть, to sink in, вѣзѹ, злѡ, злѡ. |
| Мѣрзнѹть, to freeze, мѣрзѹ, злѡ, злѡ. | Гѡснѹть, to go out, гѡсѹ, слѡ, слѡ. |
| Гѣбнѹть, to perish, гѣбѹ, блѡ, блѡ. | Тѣхнѹть, to grow still, тѣхѹ, хлѡ, хлѡ. |
| Дѡхнѹть, to die, дѡхѹ, хлѡ, хлѡ. | Стѣхнѹть, to cool, стѣхѹ, лѡ, лѡ. |

And also the prepositional verb ушибѣиѹть, to *contuse* (and with other prepositions, perfect aspect of ушибѡти), which has in the future ушибѹ, ушибѡшь, and in the preterit ушибѹ, ушиблѡ, ушиблѡ, &c.

According to the 25th paradigm (мерѣть) are conjugated verbs in ерѣть, which have in the present прѹ, and which syncopate also the preterit, observing that мерѣть and перѣть transfer in the feminine gender of the preterit the accent to the last syllable. These are:

Мерѣть, to die, *pres.* мрѹ, мрѣшь; *pret.* мѣрѹ, мерлѡ, рлѡ; рлѡ.

Перѣть, to press, — прѹ, прѣшь; — пѣрѹ, перлѡ, рлѡ; рлѡ.

And also the verb стерѣть, *pres.* стрѹ, стрѣшь; *pret.* стѣрѹ, рлѡ, рлѡ, which now is used only with a preposition, as: простѣрѣть, распрѡстѣрѣть, to *extend*.

58.—The irregular verbs of the Russian language are divided into three classes: 1) the monosyllabic verbs in мѡ preceded by a vowel; 2) some disyllabic verbs in мѡ, which in some inflections do not follow the general rules of the conjugation, and 3) the verbs with an irregular termination (in змѡ, смѡ, чѡ, му and шу), as is seen in the following table. Irregular verbs.

Among the monosyllabic verbs there are some which are regular and conjugated according to the paradigms of conjugations. These are:

(See page 142.)

CONJUGATION OF IRREGULAR VERBS.

| I. INFINITIVE. | | II. INDICATIVE. | | III. IMPERATIVE. | | Passive participle. |
|-----------------------------------|----------------------|--|--|-------------------|----------------|---------------------|
| 1. Imperfect (or perfect) aspect. | 2. Iterative aspect. | I. PRESENT (or FUTURE). Singular. | Plural. | 2d pers. Sing. | Plur. | |
| Брить, to shave . . . | брить, брѣ | бритъ, бритъ, бритъ, бритъ, бритъ, бритъ | бритъ, бритъ, бритъ, бритъ, бритъ, бритъ | брий, брей | брий, брей | бритый. |
| Дуть, to blow . . . | дуть, ду | дуть, ду, ду, ду, ду, ду | дуть, ду, ду, ду, ду, ду | дуй, дуй | дуй, дуй | дующий. |
| Умѣ (обуть), to put shoes . . . | умѣ, у | умѣ, у, у, у, у, у | умѣ, у, у, у, у, у | умѣ, у | умѣ, у | умѣнный. |
| Пѣть, to sing . . . | пѣть, пѣ | пѣть, пѣ, пѣ, пѣ, пѣ, пѣ | пѣть, пѣ, пѣ, пѣ, пѣ, пѣ | пой, пой | пой, пой | поющий. |
| Вѣть, to howl . . . | вѣть, вѣ | вѣть, вѣ, вѣ, вѣ, вѣ, вѣ | вѣть, вѣ, вѣ, вѣ, вѣ, вѣ | вѣй, вѣй | вѣй, вѣй | вѣющий. |
| Крыть, to cover . . . | крыть, кры | крыть, кры, кры, кры, кры, кры | крыть, кры, кры, кры, кры, кры | крой, крой | крой, крой | крытый. |
| Мыть, to wash . . . | мыть, мы | мыть, мы, мы, мы, мы, мы | мыть, мы, мы, мы, мы, мы | мой, мой | мой, мой | мывший. |
| Нать, to grieve . . . | нать, на | нать, на, на, на, на, на | нать, на, на, на, на, на | най, най | най, най | нающий. |
| Рать, to dig . . . | рать, ра | рать, ра, ра, ра, ра, ра | рать, ра, ра, ра, ра, ра | рой, рой | рой, рой | роющий. |
| Гнить, to putrefy . . . | гнить, гни | гнить, гни, гни, гни, гни, гни | гнить, гни, гни, гни, гни, гни | гни, гни | гни, гни | гниющий. |
| Вить, to beat . . . | вить, вѣ | вить, вѣ, вѣ, вѣ, вѣ, вѣ | вить, вѣ, вѣ, вѣ, вѣ, вѣ | бей, бей | бей, бей | битый. |
| Шить, to sew . . . | шить, шѣ | шить, шѣ, шѣ, шѣ, шѣ, шѣ | шить, шѣ, шѣ, шѣ, шѣ, шѣ | шей, шей | шей, шей | шитый. |
| Вить, to twine . . . | вить, вѣ | вить, вѣ, вѣ, вѣ, вѣ, вѣ | вить, вѣ, вѣ, вѣ, вѣ, вѣ | вей, вей | вей, вей | витый. |
| Лить, to pour . . . | лить, ль | лить, ль, ль, ль, ль, ль | лить, ль, ль, ль, ль, ль | лей, лей | лей, лей | литый. |
| Пить, to drink . . . | пить, пѣ | пить, пѣ, пѣ, пѣ, пѣ, пѣ | пить, пѣ, пѣ, пѣ, пѣ, пѣ | пей, пей | пей, пей | питый. |
| Чить (почить), to repose . . . | чить, чи | чить, чи, чи, чи, чи, чи | чить, чи, чи, чи, чи, чи | чѣй, чѣй | чѣй, чѣй | чѣй, чѣй |
| Жить, to live . . . | жить, жив | жить, жив, жив, жив, жив, жив | жить, жив, жив, жив, жив, жив | живѣй, живѣй | живѣй, живѣй | (род) живый. |
| Плать, to navigate . . . | плать, плыв | плать, плыв, плыв, плыв, плыв, плыв | плать, плыв, плыв, плыв, плыв, плыв | плывѣй, плывѣй | плывѣй, плывѣй | плывѣй, плывѣй |
| Слать, to be reputed . . . | слать, слыв | слать, слыв, слыв, слыв, слыв, слыв | слать, слыв, слыв, слыв, слыв, слыв | слывѣй, слывѣй | слывѣй, слывѣй | слывѣй, слывѣй |
| Сксть, to grow cold . . . | сксть, стѣн | сксть, стѣн, стѣн, стѣн, стѣн, стѣн | сксть, стѣн, стѣн, стѣн, стѣн, стѣн | стѣнь, стѣнь | стѣнь, стѣнь | стѣнь, стѣнь |
| Здѣть, to build . . . | здѣть, здѣ | здѣть, здѣ, здѣ, здѣ, здѣ, здѣ | здѣть, здѣ, здѣ, здѣ, здѣ, здѣ | здѣй, здѣй | здѣй, здѣй | здѣй, здѣй |
| Ять (звать), to take . . . | ять, я | ять, я, я, я, я, я | ять, я, я, я, я, я | звѣй, звѣй | звѣй, звѣй | звѣй, звѣй |

I. MONOSYLLABIC VERBS.

| I. INFINITIVE. | | II. INDICATIVE. | | | III. IMPERATIVE. | | Passive participle. |
|-----------------------------------|----------------------|-------------------------|----------------------------|---|------------------|-------------------|---------------------|
| 1. Imperfect (or perfect) aspect. | 2. Iterative aspect. | 1. Present (or Future). | 2. Present. | 3. VERBS WITH AN IRREGULAR TERMINATION. | 2d pers. | Full termination. | |
| | | Singular. | Plural. | | Sing. | Plur. | |
| Вести, to carry | — | веду, без | ведёте, а вы, а вы, а вы | ведёте, а вы, а вы, а вы | веди, ите | ведите | ведённый. |
| Ползти, to crawl | ползать | ползу, полз | ползёте, а вы, а вы, а вы | ползёте, а вы, а вы, а вы | ползи, ите | ползите | — |
| Грязить, to gnaw | грязнать | грязю, гряз | грязёте, а вы, а вы, а вы | грязёте, а вы, а вы, а вы | грязи, ите | грязите | грязённый. |
| Лезть, to climb | лезать | лезу, лез | лезёте, а вы, а вы, а вы | лезёте, а вы, а вы, а вы | лезь, ите | лезите | — |
| Вера́ть (отверзати), to open | верзати | верзу, верз | верзёте, а вы, а вы, а вы | верзёте, а вы, а вы, а вы | верзи, ите | верзите | верзанный. |
| Нести, to bring | — | несу, нес | несёте, а вы, а вы, а вы | несёте, а вы, а вы, а вы | неси, ите | несите | несённый. |
| Насты, to pasture | настать | насту, наст | настёте, а вы, а вы, а вы | настёте, а вы, а вы, а вы | наси, ите | насите | настённый. |
| Тристы, to shake | трясать | трясу, тряс | трясёте, а вы, а вы, а вы | трясёте, а вы, а вы, а вы | тряси, ите | трясите | трясённый. |
| Грести́ or Гребсти́, to row | гребать | гребу, греб | гребёте, а вы, а вы, а вы | гребёте, а вы, а вы, а вы | греби, ите | гребите | гребённый. |
| Скребсти́, to scrape | скребать | скребу, скреб | скребёте, а вы, а вы, а вы | скребёте, а вы, а вы, а вы | скреби, ите | скребите | скребённый. |
| Восты, to butt | бодать | боду, бод | бодёте, а вы, а вы, а вы | бодёте, а вы, а вы, а вы | боди, ите | бодите | — |
| Влосты́, to keep | влодывать | влодую, влод | влодёте, а вы, а вы, а вы | влодёте, а вы, а вы, а вы | влоди, ите | влодите | влодённый. |
| Брести́, to ramble | — | бреду, бред | брёте, а вы, а вы, а вы | брёте, а вы, а вы, а вы | бреди, ите | бредите | — |
| Вести́, to lead | — | веду, вед | ведёте, а вы, а вы, а вы | ведёте, а вы, а вы, а вы | веди, ите | ведите | ведённый. |
| Клести́, to lay | кладывать | кладу, клад | кладёте, а вы, а вы, а вы | кладёте, а вы, а вы, а вы | клади, ите | кладите | кладённый. |
| Насты́, perf. asp. to fall | — | паду, пад | падёте, а вы, а вы, а вы | падёте, а вы, а вы, а вы | пади, ите | падите | — |
| Прясти́, to spin | прядать | пряду, пряд | прядёте, а вы, а вы, а вы | прядёте, а вы, а вы, а вы | пряди, ите | прядите | прядённый. |
| Гристи́, to go | — | гриду, гряд | грёте, а вы, а вы, а вы | грёте, а вы, а вы, а вы | гряди, ите | грядите | грядённый. |
| Красти́, to steal | крадывать | краду, крад | крадёте, а вы, а вы, а вы | крадёте, а вы, а вы, а вы | кради, ите | крадите | крадённый. |
| Ссты́, perf. asp. to sit | — | сяду, сяд | сидёте, а вы, а вы, а вы | сидёте, а вы, а вы, а вы | сяди, ите | сидите | — |
| Мсти́, to perturb | мстать | мстю, мст | мстёте, а вы, а вы, а вы | мстёте, а вы, а вы, а вы | мсти, ите | мстите | мстённый. |
| Мсти́, to sweep | метать | мету, мет | метёте, а вы, а вы, а вы | метёте, а вы, а вы, а вы | мети, ите | метите | метённый. |
| Гнесты́, to press | гнестать | гнестю, гнест | гнестёте, а вы, а вы, а вы | гнестёте, а вы, а вы, а вы | гнести, ите | гнестите | гнестённый. |
| Плесты́, to plait | плестать | плестю, плест | плестёте, а вы, а вы, а вы | плестёте, а вы, а вы, а вы | плести, ите | плестите | плестённый. |
| Цветы́, to flower | цветать | цвету, цвет | цветёте, а вы, а вы, а вы | цветёте, а вы, а вы, а вы | цвети, ите | цветите | — |
| Россти́ (оброссти́), to find out | роснать | росу, рос | росёте, а вы, а вы, а вы | росёте, а вы, а вы, а вы | роси, ите | росите | росённый. |
| Честы́ (счесть), to count | читанье | читу, чит | читёте, а вы, а вы, а вы | читёте, а вы, а вы, а вы | чити, ите | читите | читённый. |

| | |
|--|---|
| Знать, to know, I. 1, <i>pres.</i> знаю, знаешь. | Тмѣть, to darken, II. 1, <i>pres.</i> тмою. |
| Пхать, to push, — пхāju. | Бдѣть, to wake, — блюю. |
| Чкать, to clash, — чкāju. | Зрѣть, to see, — зрю. |
| Грѣть, to warm, I. 4, <i>pres.</i> грѣю. | Мжѣть, to twinkle, II. 3, <i>pres.</i> мжу, мжѣшь. |
| Зрѣть, to ripen, — зрѣю. | Мшѣть, to cover with moss, — мшу. |
| Млѣть, to be stupified, — млѣю. | Тщѣться, to endeavour, — тщусь. |
| Прѣть, to stew, — прѣю. | Мчать, to hurry, — мчу. |
| Рдѣть, to redden, — рдѣю. | Нзѣть (pronзѣть), to pierce, II. 4, <i>pres.</i> -нжу, нзѣшь. |
| Смѣть, to dare, — смѣю. | Льстѣть, to flatter, II. 7, <i>pres.</i> льщу, льстѣшь. |
| Спѣть, to ripen, — спѣю. | Мстѣть, to avenge, — мщу, мстѣшь. |
| Тлѣть, to rot, — тлѣю. | Гнѣть, to bend, III. 1, <i>pres.</i> гну, гнѣшь. |
| Длѣть, to prolong, II. 1, <i>pres.</i> длю, длѣшь. | Льнушь, to stick, — льну. |
| Дмѣть, to swell, — дмю. | Мзгнѣть, to turn sour, — мзгну. |
| Злѣть, to irritate, — злю. | Мкнѣть, to shut, — мкну. |
| Мнѣть, to think, — мню. | Снѣть, to fall asleep, — сну. |
| Снѣться, to dream, <i>impers.</i> снѣтся. | |
| Тлѣть, to corrupt, — тлю, тлѣшь. | |

The preceding table of irregular verbs gives also the *iterative aspect* and the *passive participle*, inflections which in these verbs do not follow always the general rules of the formation.

Delineation
of verbs.

59.—The property of the Russian verbs to have more or less aspects, is named their *delineation* (начертаніе), and depends as well upon their exterior form as upon their meaning. With this relation the verbs, as is above mentioned (§ 50), are *simple* (простые) or *prepositional* (предложные).

1. The *simple* verbs, which are without a preposition, can be *complete* (полные), *double* (сугубые), *incomplete* (неполные) and *defective* (недостаточные). The *complete* simple verbs are those which designate a physical action of men or animals, as кидать, to throw; плевать, to spit. The *double* simple verbs are those which express the movement of an acting object, as идти and ходить, to go; нести and носить, to bring. The *incomplete* and *defective* simple verbs are those which are not included in

the two preceding subdivisions, as *дѣлать*, *to make*; *имѣть*, *to have*.

2. The *prepositional* verbs, which are formed with any preposition, are subdivided, relatively to their delineation, according as they are derivated from the incomplete, defective, complete or double simple verbs.—In general the delineation of the Russian verbs, as well simple as prepositional, is seen in the following table.

DELINEATION OF VERBS.

| I. SIMPLE VERBS. | II. PREPOSITIONAL VERBS. |
|--|--|
| 1. The <i>incomplete</i> simple verbs have 2 aspects: | 1. Formed from the <i>incomplete</i> simple verbs, the prepositional verbs have 2 aspects: |
| 1) <i>imperfect</i> . дѣлать. | 2) <i>iterative</i> . дѣлывать. |
| 3. The <i>defective</i> simple verbs have only the <i>imperfect</i> aspect. | 1) <i>imperfect</i> . обдѣлывать. |
| имѣть. | 2) <i>perfect of duration</i> . обдѣлать. |
| 3. The <i>complete</i> simple verbs have the 3 aspects: | 2. Formed from the <i>defective</i> simple verbs, they have only the aspect <i>perfect of duration</i> . |
| 1) <i>imperfect</i> . кѣдѣть. | возвѣщать. |
| 2) <i>iterative</i> . кѣдывать. | 3. Formed from the <i>complete</i> simple verbs, they have the 3 aspects: |
| 3) <i>perf. of unity</i> . кѣнуть. | 1) <i>imperfect</i> . закѣдывать. |
| 4. The <i>double</i> simple verbs are two verbs which have together 3 aspects: | 2) <i>perf. of durat.</i> закѣдѣть. |
| 1) <i>definite imp.</i> нести. | 3) <i>perf. of unity</i> . закѣнуть. |
| 2) <i>indefn. imp.</i> носить. | 4. Formed from the <i>double</i> simple verbs, there are two various verbs, each with 2 aspects: |
| 3) <i>iterative</i> . нашивать. | a) from the <i>definite</i> verb. 1) <i>imperf.</i> выносить. |
| | b) from the <i>indefinite</i> verb. 2) <i>perfect</i> . вынести. |
| | 1) <i>imperf.</i> вынашивать. |
| | 2) <i>perfect</i> . выносить. |

60.—The *incomplete* simple verbs are those which do not designate a physical action properly so called, neither a movement of a place to another. These verbs have two aspects: 1) the *imperfect* aspect, and 2) the *iterative* aspect. The first, which is the radical form of the verb, ends in *мъ*, *шь*, *ми* or *уи*, and the latter in *ываю*, *иваю*, *ваю* or

Simple
verbs.

amb, and is formed from the imperfect aspect, as is seen in the following examples.

In the formation of the iterative aspect the tonic accent is placed on the termination *samb* and *amb*, whilst in *ивать* and *ивать* it is placed on the antepenultima, and if in this syllable is an *o*, this vowel is changed into *á*. We must yet observe that the iterative aspect is seldom used in the infinitive, and it has in general only the preterit tense; e. g. не *пи́сать* тебѣ *вина́*, *you ought not to drink wine*; онъ *пѣ́зжалъ* *верхо́мъ*, *he rid often*; but this inflection is necessary to form the prepositional verbs. The table of irregular verbs, above shown (§ 58), gives also the iterative aspect, which in these verbs presents some irregularities.

| 1) Imperfect aspect. | 2) Iterative asp. |
|--|-------------------|
| Гадать, to guess, I. 1. | га́дывать. |
| Думать, to think, — | ду́мывать. |
| Дѣлать, to make, — | дѣ́лывать. |
| Играть, to play, — | иѓрывать. |
| Кутать, to wrap, — | ку́тывать. |
| Мотать, to wind, — | ма́тывать. |
| Работать, to work, — | раба́тывать. |
| Щупать, to sound, — | щу́пывать. |
| Знать, to know, — | знава́ть. |
| Ковать, to forge, I. 2. | ко́вывать. |
| Рисовать, to draw, — | рисо́вывать. |
| Советовать, to counsel, — | совѣ́тывать. |
| Воевать, to war, — | воё́вывать. |
| Дневать, to pass the day, — | днё́вывать. |
| Ночевать, to pass the night, — | ночѣ́вывать. |
| Гулять, to take a walk, I. 3. | гу́лывать. |
| Равнять, to equal, — | ра́внивать. |
| Смѣяться, to laugh, — | смѣ́иваться. |
| Вѣять, to blow, — | вѣва́ть. |
| Сѣять, to sow, — | сѣва́ть. |
| Слабѣть, to grow weak, I. 4. | слабѣ́вать. |
| Грѣть, to warm, — | грѣва́ть. |
| Говѣть, to keep fast, — | гавни́вать. |

1) *Imperfect aspect.*2) *Iterative asp.*

| | |
|-------------------------------------|---------------|
| Брани́ть, to scold, II, 1. | бра́нивать. |
| Пали́ть, to fire, — | па́ливать. |
| Моли́ть, to pray, — | ма́ливать. |
| Спори́ть, to contend, — | спа́ривать. |
| Дари́ть, to give, — | да́ривать. |
| Дрази́ть, to provoke, — | дра́жнить. |
| Боле́ть, to ache, — | ба́ливать. |
| Смотре́ть, to look, — | сма́тривать. |
| Горѣ́ть, to burn, — | гара́ть. |
| Веле́ть, to order, — | веля́вать. |
| Зре́ть, to see, — | зира́ть. |
| Пои́ть, to give to drink, | па́ивать. |
| Клеи́ть, to glue, — | кле́ивать. |
| Боя́ться, to fear, — | ба́иваться. |
| Поро́ть, to rip, — | па́рывать. |
| Моло́ть, to grind, — | ма́лывать. |
| Люби́ть, to love, II, 2. | лю́блять. |
| Лови́ть, to catch, — | ла́вливать. |
| Руби́ть, to hew, — | руба́ть. |
| Корми́ть, to nourish, — | ка́рмливать. |
| То́пить, to heat, — | та́пливать. |
| Терпе́ть, to suffer, — | тере́пливать. |
| Кипѣ́ть, to boil, — | кипа́ть. |
| Дрема́ть, to slumber, — | дре́мливать. |
| Сыпа́ть, to strew, — | сыпа́ть. |
| Хрома́ть, to be lame, — | хра́мывать. |
| Лечи́ть, to cure, II, 3. | ле́чить. |
| Служи́ть, to serve, — | слу́живать. |
| Туши́ть, to put out, — | ту́шить. |
| Морщи́ть, to wrinkle, — | ма́рщивать. |
| Держа́ть, to keep, — | де́рживать. |
| Молча́ть, to be silent, — | ма́лчивать. |
| Дыша́ть, to breathe, — | дыха́ть. |
| Глади́ть, to even, II, 4. | гла́живать. |
| Городи́ть, to enclose, — | гора́живать. |
| Суди́ть, to judge, — | су́живать. |
| Грузи́ть, to lade, — | гру́живать. |

| 1) <i>Imperfect aspect.</i> | 2) <i>Iterative asp.</i> |
|------------------------------------|--------------------------|
| Сидѣть, to sit, II. 4. | сѣживать. |
| Вязать, to tie, — | вязывать. |
| Платить, to pay, II. 5. | плачивать. |
| Колотить, to knock, — | колачивать. |
| Молотить, to thrash, — | молачивать. |
| Плакать, to weep, — | плакивать. |
| Вѣсить, to weigh, II. 6. | вѣшивать. |
| Просить, to ask, — | прашивать. |
| Гасить, to extinguish, — | гашивать. |
| Писать, to write, — | пи́сывать. |
| Плясать, to dance, — | плясывать. |
| Пахать, to plough, — | пахивать. |
| Гостить, to visit, II. 7. | гашивать. |
| Мостить, to floor, — | мощивать. |
| Снастить, to rig, — | сна́чивать. |
| Искать, to seek, — | и́скивать. |
| Топнуть, to sink, III. 1. | топáть. |
| Тянуть, to draw, — | тя́гивать. |
| Вянуть, to fade, — | вядáть. |
| Сохнуть, to dry, — | сыхáть. |
| Пахнуть, to smell, — | пахивать. |
| Гнуть, to bend, — | гну́бать. |
| Мкнуть, to shut, — | мы́кать. |
| Сосать, to suck, — | сáсывать. |
| Переть, to press, III. 2. | пи́рять. |
| Тереть, to rub, — | ти́рять. |

61.—The *defective* simple verbs are those which have only the *indefinite imperfect* aspect, such are the following verbs:

| | |
|-------------------------------------|-------------------------------|
| Адѣть, to grow ruby. I. 4. | Желать, to wish, I. 1. |
| Бѣдствовать, to be in misery, I. 2. | Имѣть, to have, I. 4. |
| Винить, to accuse, II. 1. | Карать, to punish, I. 1. |
| Владѣть, to govern, I. 4. | Лстить, to flatter, II. 7. |
| Вредить, to hurt, II. 4. | Мечтать, to imagine, I. 1. |
| Гордиться, to be proud, II. 4. | Мирить, to pacify, II. 1. |
| Жалѣть, to have pity, I. 4. | Мудрить, to subtilize, II. 1. |

| | |
|--------------------------------|-------------------------------|
| Мягчить, to mollify, II. 3. | Творить, to create, II. 1. |
| Побдничать, to lunch, I. 1. | Терять, to lose, I. 3. |
| Радѣть, to take care, I. 4. | Торопить, to hurry, II. 2. |
| Растить, to let grow, II. 7. | Умничать, to refine, I. 1. * |
| Роптать, to murmur, II. 7. | Умѣть, to know, I. 4. |
| Рыдать, to sob, I. 1. | Хитрить, to be artful, II. 1. |
| Святить, to sanctify, II. 7. | Хранить, to preserve, II. 1. |
| Спѣшить, to hasten, II. 3. | Хотѣть, to will, <i>irr.</i> |
| Стараться, to endeavour, I. 1. | Щадить, to spare, II. 4. |

The defective verbs differ from the incomplete verbs in as much as they have not the iterative aspect, which in general is used only in verbs designating an ordinary, non intellectual action, and it is not found in poetry neither in an elevated style.

62.—The *complete* simple verbs are those which designate ordinarily a physical action of men or animals, or, speaking more correctly, a visible or audible action. These verbs have the three aspects: 1) the *imperfect*, 2) the *iterative*, and 3) the *perfect of unity*. The two first aspects have all the properties of those of incomplete verbs; but the perfect aspect of unity ends in *нѣтъ*, and is formed putting this termination in the place of that of the imperfect aspect, sometimes with a little change of the vowel, and sometimes with the elision of the preceding consonant, as is seen in the following examples.

| 1) <i>Imperfect aspect.</i> | 2) <i>Iterative aspect.</i> | 3) <i>Perf. asp. of unity.</i> |
|-----------------------------|-----------------------------|--------------------------------|
| А'хать, to sigh, I. 1. . . | а'хивать. | а'хнѣтъ, III. 1. |
| Блѣстѣть, to shine, — . . . | — | блѣснѣтъ, — |
| Болтать, to shake, — . . . | б'алтывать. | болтнѣтъ, — |
| Глотѣть, to swallow, — . . | гл'атывать. | глонѣтъ, — |
| Двѣгать, to move, I. 1. and | | |
| II. 4. | двѣгивать and двѣгѣть. | двѣнѣтъ, — |
| Дерзѣть, to dare, I. 1. . . | — | дерзнѣтъ, — |

1) *Imperfect aspect.* 2) *Iterative aspect.* 3) *Perf. asp. of unity.*

| | | |
|-------------------------------|----------------------|------------------|
| Зѣвѣть, to yawn, I. 1. | зѣвывать. | зѣвнѣть, III, 1. |
| Кѣсѣться, to touch, — | — | коснѣться, — |
| Квѣкать, to quack, — | квѣкивать. | квѣкнѣть, — |
| Кивѣть, to give a nod, — | — | кивнѣть, — |
| Кидѣть, to cast, — | кидывать. | киднѣть, — |
| Лѣпать, to burst, — | лѣпывать. | лѣпнѣть, — |
| Нюхѣть, to smell, — | нюхивать. | нюхнѣть, — |
| Пѣрхѣть, to flutter, — | пѣрхивать. | пѣрхнѣть, — |
| Прыгѣть, to jump, — | прыгивать. | прыгнѣть, — |
| Прядѣть, to bound, — | прядывать. | пряднѣть, — |
| Сверкѣть, to flash, — | сверкивать. | сверкнѣть, — |
| Толкѣть, to push, — | толкивать. | толкнѣть, — |
| Трогѣть, to touch, — | трогивать. | трогнѣть, — |
| Хѣркѣть, to spit, — | хѣркивать. | хѣркнѣть, — |
| Хлѣпать, to clap, — | хлѣпывать. | хлѣпнѣть, — |
| Совѣть, to shove, I. 2. | совывать. | сунѣть, — |
| Клевѣть, to peck, — | клевывать. | клѣпнѣть, — |
| Плевѣть, to spit, — | плѣвывать. | плѣпнѣть, — |
| Жевѣть, to chew, — | жѣвывать. | жевнѣть, — |
| Кашляѣть, to cough, I. 3. | кашливать. | кашлянѣть, — |
| Нырѣть, to dive, — | ныривать. | нырнѣть, — |
| Стрѣляѣть, to shoot, — | стрѣливать. | стрѣльнѣть, — |
| Швырѣть, to sling, — | швыривать. | швырнѣть, — |
| Рѣять, to throw, — | — | ринѣть, — |
| Скользѣть, to slip, II. 1. | скальзывать. | скользнѣть, — |
| Шевелѣть, to stir, — | шевеливать. | шевелинѣть, — |
| Колѣть, to sting, — | калывать. | колынѣть, — |
| Давѣть, to press, II. 2. | давливать. | давнѣть, — |
| Рубѣть, to hew, — | рубѣть. | рубнѣть, — |
| Гремѣть, to thunder, — | — | грѣнѣть, — |
| Храпѣть, to snore, — | храпывать. | храпнѣть, — |
| Трепѣть, to brake, — | трепливать. | трепнѣть, — |
| Щипѣть, to pinch, — | щипывать. | щипнѣть, — |
| Ворошиѣть, to rummage, II. 3. | воращивать. | ворохнѣть, — |
| Плющѣть, to flatten, — | плющивать. | плюснѣть, — |
| Визжѣть, to squeak, — | визгивать. | визгнѣть, — |
| Дрожѣть, to tremble, — | драгивать. | дрогнѣть, — |

1) *imperfect aspect.*2) *Iterative aspect.*3) *Perf. asp. of unity.*

| | | |
|---------------------------------|---------------------------|--------------------|
| Крича́ть, to cry, II. 3. | кри́кнѣвать. | кри́кнѣть, III. 1. |
| Пы́шать, to burn, — . | пы́хивать. | пы́хнѣть, — |
| Тре́щать, to burst, — . | тре́скивать. | тре́снѣть, — |
| Гля́деть, to look, II. 4. | гля́дивать. | гля́знѣть, — |
| Бры́згать, to splash, — . | бры́згивать. | бры́знѣть, — |
| Лиза́ть, to lick, — . | лизыва́ть. | лизнѣть, — |
| Ма́зать, to anoint, — . | ма́зывать. | мазнѣть, — |
| Верту́ть, to turn, II. 5. | вёртыва́ть от вёрчива́ть. | верну́ть, — |
| Ска́кать, to leap, — . | ска́кивать. | ско́кнѣть, — |
| Кли́кать, to call, — . | кли́кать. | кли́кнѣть, — |
| Шепта́ть, to whisper, — . | ше́птывать. | ше́пнѣть, — |
| Труси́ть, to sprinkle, II. 6. | — | тру́хнѣть, — |
| Колыха́ть, to swing, — . | колы́хивать. | колы́хнѣть, — |
| Маха́ть, to wave, — . | ма́хивать. | махнѣть, — |
| Плеска́ть, to splash, II. 7. | плёскивать. | плеснѣть, — |
| Пры́скать, to syringe, — . | пры́скивать. | пры́снѣть, — |
| Свиста́ть, to whistle, — . | свистыва́ть. | свистнѣть, — |
| Хлеста́ть, to lash, — . | хлёстывать. | хлеснѣть, — |
| Грести́, to scrape, <i>irr.</i> | греба́ть. | гребну́ть, — |
| Ду́ть, to blow, — . | дува́ть. | ду́нѣть, — |
| Же́чь, to burn, — . | жи́гать. | жигну́ть, — |
| Рва́ть, to tear, — . | рыва́ть. | рвану́ть, — |
| Стри́чь, to shear, . . . | стрига́ть. | стригну́ть, — |
| Траса́ть, to shake, — . | траса́ть. | тряхну́ть, — |

Some verbs, as *мину́ть, обману́ть, помяну́ть, выну́ть*, which are perfect aspects of *миновать, to pass; обманывать, to cheat; поминать, to mention; вынимать, to take out*, have the termination of the perfect aspect of unity; but by their meaning they do not designate an action performed only once. In these verbs the letter *н* belongs to the root, and not to the termination.

63.—The *double* simple verbs are those which designate the movement of an acting object, or sometimes a visible or audible action. These verbs have together three aspects: 1) the *definite imperfect*, 2) the *indefinite imperfect*, and 3) the *iterative*

aspect. The definite aspect is the radical form, from which are derived both the others. These are the following verbs:

| 1) <i>Definite imperfect aspect.</i> | 2) <i>Indefinite imp. aspect.</i> | 3) <i>Iterative aspect.</i> |
|--------------------------------------|-----------------------------------|-----------------------------|
| Блудить, to ramble, II. 4. | блуждать, I. 1. | — |
| Брести, to wander, <i>irr.</i> | бродить, II. 4. | браживать. |
| Бѣжать, to run, <i>irr.</i> | бѣгать, I. 1. | бѣживать and бѣгать. |
| Валить, to throw down, II. 1. | валать, I. 3. | важивать. |
| Везти, to carry, <i>irr.</i> | возить, II. 4. | важивать. |
| Вести, to lead, <i>irr.</i> | водить, — | важивать. |
| Видѣть, to see, II. 4. | видать, I. 1. | видывать. |
| Гнать, to drive, <i>irr.</i> | гонять, I. 3. | ганживать. |
| Идти, to go, <i>irr.</i> | ходить, II. 4. | хаживать. |
| Катить, to roll, II. 5. | качать, I. 1. | качивать. |
| Кривить, to crook, II. 2. | кривлять, I. 3. | крививать. |
| Летѣть, to fly, II. 5. | летать, I. 1. | лѣтывать. |
| Ломить, to break, II. 2. | ломать, — | ламывать. |
| Лѣзть, to climb, <i>irr.</i> | лѣзть, II. 4. | лѣзать and лѣживать. |
| Нести, to bring, <i>irr.</i> | носить, II. 6. | нашивать. |
| Плыть, to swim, <i>irr.</i> | плавать, I. 1. | плывать. |
| Ползти, to crawl, <i>irr.</i> | ползать, — | ползать and пѣзывать. |
| Ронить, to let fall, II. 1. | ронять, I. 3. | ранживать. |
| Слышать, to hear, II. 3. | слыхать, I. 1. | слыхивать. |
| Садить, to seat, II. 4. | сажать, — | саживать. |
| Ташить, to trail, II. 3. | таскать, — | таскивать. |
| Ѣхать, to ride, <i>irr.</i> | ѣздить, II. 4. | ѣживать and ѣзжать. |

The Russian language has some verbs which, with a double termination, do not designate a movement; such are: блистать and блистѣть, to shine; мѣрить and мѣрять, to measure; сви-стать and свистѣть, to whistle. These verbs do not belong to the class of the double verbs; they are two various forms which have the same meaning, and which do not express the definite or indefinite nature of the action.

Prepositional verbs.

64.—The prepositional verbs are formed from the simple verbs by means of any preposition. The prepositions, when they are joined to a verb, sub-

ject it to sundry changes either in the voice, in the aspect and time, or in the meaning.

1. A neuter verb sometimes takes with the preposition the active meaning, as: спать, *to sleep*, and проспáть, *to pass in sleeping*; быть, *to be*, and забыть, *to forget*; пла́кать, *to weep*, and выпла́кать, *to obtain by weeping*.

2. The influence of a preposition on the time and aspect is more important than that on the voice. A simple verb, taking a preposition, receives a more restricted meaning. Thus, by joining to a preposition, the iterative aspect becomes imperfect, and the imperfect aspect becomes perfect. But this latter remains a perfect aspect even with a preposition, as is seen by the two following examples.

| Simple figure. | Prepositional figure. |
|---|---|
| Двѣнуть, to move, } <i>perf. asp. of unity.</i> | Вдвѣнуть, to move in, } <i>perf. asp. of unity.</i> |
| Бросить, to throw, } | Набросить, to throw on, } |
| двѣгать, } <i>imperfect aspect</i> | вдвѣгать, } <i>perf. asp. of duration.</i> |
| бросать, } | набросать, } |
| двѣгать or двѣгивать, } <i>iterative asp.</i> | двѣгать or вдвѣгивать, } <i>imperfect asp.</i> |
| брасывать, } | набрасывать, } |

3. The acceptation of the verb, independently of the completion of the action, is modified by the meaning of the preposition, as is seen in the two following examples: ходѣть or идти, *to go*, and имáть or ять, *to take*.

| | |
|--------------------------------|--------------------------------------|
| Входить, войти, to go in. | Нисходить, нисзойти, to go down. |
| Восходить, взойти, to go up. | Обходить, обойти, to go round. |
| Выходить, выйти, to go out. | Отходить, отойти, to go away. |
| Доходить, дойти, to come to. | Переходить, перейти, to go over. |
| Заходить, зайти, to go behind. | Превосходить, превзойти, to surpass. |
| Исходить, изойти, to go out. | |
| Находить, найти, to go upon. | |

| | |
|--|---|
| Походить, to resemble. | Донимать, донять, to get the remainder. |
| Пойти, to go. | Занимать, занять, to borrow. |
| Подходить, подойти, to go under. | Изнимать, изнять, to take out. |
| Предходить, to go before. | Нанимать, нанять, to hire. |
| Приходить, прийти, to come in. | Обнимать, обнять, to embrace. |
| Проходить, пройти, to go through. | Отнимать, отнять, to take away. |
| Пронсходить, пронзойти, to proceed. | Перенимать, перенять, to intercept. [stand. |
| Расходиться, разойтись, to go asunder. | Понимать, понять, to understand. |
| Сходить, сойти, to go down. | Поймать, to catch. |
| Снисходить, снизойти, to condescend. | Поднимать, поднять, to take up. |
| Уходить, уйти, to go away. | Предпринимать, предпринять, to undertake. |
| Внимать, внять, to attend to. | Принимать, принять, to accept. |
| Взпымать, to levy. | Приподнимать, приподнять, to raise up. |
| Взять, to take. | Пронимать, пронять, to put through. |
| Воздымать, to raise. | Разнимать, разнять, to take asunder. |
| Воспринимать, воспринять, to receive. | Снимать, снять, to take off. |
| Вынимать, вынуть, to take out. | Унимать, унять, to repress. |

The two preceding examples show that the prepositions which are joined to verbs, are: в (во), вз (взо, воз), вы, до, за, из (изо), на, над (надо), низ (низо), о or об (обо), от (ото), пере or пре, по, под (подо), при, про, раз (разо), с (со), у. We must remark that the prepositions which end in a vowel, never undergo a change, whilst those which end in a consonant, take the vowel *o*, when they have to be united to a verb which begins with two or three consonants, as well as to the verb идти (*sl. ити*), in which the vowel *u* besides that changes into the semi-vowel (*й*).

The prepositions без (безо), пред (предо), and also с (со) in the meaning of a reciprocal action, modifying the acceptance of a verb, do not communicate to it the meaning of the completion of an action. Joined to one of these prepositions, the verb remains in its imperfect aspect, as: безчестить, to dishonour; предвидеть, to foresee; содѣйствовать, to cooperate.

It is the same with adverbs used sometimes for prepositions, e. g. *противостоять*, to resist; *мимоидти*, to come by.

Care must be taken not to confound the prepositional verbs with the verbs which are derived from nouns formed with a preposition, as: *разумѣть*, to understand, from *разумъ*, intelligence; *помнить*, to remember, from *память*, memory; *совѣститься*, to have a conscience, from *совѣсть*, conscience. These verbs belong to the class of the incomplete simple verbs.

65.—The prepositional verbs, with regard to their delineation, differ among them, according as they are formed from the defective, incomplete, complete or double simple verbs.

1. Those which are derived from a *defective* simple verb, have only the *perfect* aspect, which is purely the imperfect aspect of the simple verb, joined to one of the prepositions above enumerated. Such are:

| | |
|---|---------------------------------------|
| Пожелать, to wish, I. 1. | Растерять, to lose, I. 3. |
| Покара́ть, to chastise, — | Возымѣть, to have, I. 4. |
| Отмечать, to imagine, — | Завладѣть, to possess, — |
| Воспы́лать, to burst into flames, — | Сумѣть, to know, — |
| Нары́даться, to wail, — | Ощени́ться, to whelp, II. 1. |
| Постара́ться, to endeavour, — | Остепени́ться, to grow sedate, — |
| Ошельмовать, to treat like a rogue, I. 2. | Возгорди́ться, to be proud of, II. 4. |
| Возопи́ть (for <i>взвонѣть</i>), to cry out, I. 3. | Пощади́ть, to spare, — |
| | Затрепета́ть, to tremble, II. 7. |
| | Поблѣкнуть, to fade, III. 1. |

Some verbs derived from the defective simple verbs, have also the *imperfect* aspect, which is formed from the iterative aspect, not used in the simple verb and taken in its contracted form, as will be seen later (2. б).

The preceding and the following examples show that the *perfect* aspect of a prepositional verb is formed from the im-

perfect aspect of the simple verb, by the mere joining of a preposition, without any change in the termination of the verb. Further, the infinitive and the imperative from imperfect become *perfect* (стараться, *to endeavour*; старайся, *endeavour*, and постараться, *to use all one's endeavours*; постарайся, *use all your endeavours*); the present (стараясь, *I endeavour*) becomes a *perfect future* (постараюсь, *I shall endeavour, I shall use all my endeavours*), and the imperfect preterit (старался, *I endeavoured*) becomes a *perfect preterit* (постарался, *I have used all my endeavours*).

As the prepositions serve generally to form the perfect preterit and future of the defective simple verbs, custom only can show what is the preposition which a verb takes in order to designate the completion of an action. Thus *за* expresses a beginning; *но*, a part; *до*, the finishing; *от*, the discontinuance; *про*, all the time; *с*, *у*, *за*, *но*, the completion and simultaneousness; *в*, *из*, *об*, *при*, *пере*, a totality. E. g. заговорить, *to begin to speak*; поговорить, *to speak a little*; договорить, *to finish speaking*; отговорить, *to leave off speaking*; проговорить, *to pass the time in speaking*; сдѣлать, *to have made*; украсть, *to have stolen*; засмѣяться, *to have laughed*; покраснѣть, *to have blushed*; выходить, исходить, обходить, *to have gone all over*; прѣсть, *to have eaten all up*; передѣлать, *to have made all*.

2. Derived from the *incomplete* simple verbs, the prepositional verbs have two aspects: 1) the *perfect* aspect, and 2) the *imperfect* aspect, which are formed, the former from the imperfect, and the latter from the iterative aspect of the simple verb, at first without any change in the terminations, at other times with contraction, sometimes even with and without contraction at the same time: occasionally they vary widely from the general rules for the formation of the prepositional verbs. We sometimes find: a quite irregular formation, the want of one of the two aspects perfect or imperfect, the loss or non-existence of the simple verb which has

formed the prepositional verb, and several other irregularities which are mentioned below.

We must remark that in the prepositional verbs the tonic accent remains upon the same syllable as in the simple verb, with exception of the verbs formed with the preposition *бы*, which in the perfect aspect transfer the accent of this preposition. Some monosyllabic verbs, taking a preposition, transfer also, in the preterit of the perfect aspect, the accent to the preposition; as: *умеръ, отперъ, прибылъ, началъ*, &c., from *умерѣть, to die; отперѣть, to open; прибыть, to arrive; начать, to begin*.

a) The perfect and imperfect aspects of the prepositional verb preserve both the terminations of the imperfect and iterative aspects of the simple verb. Such are:

| 1) Perfect aspect. | 2) Imperfect asp. |
|--|-------------------|
| Уга́даты, to guess, I. 1. | уга́дываты, I. 1. |
| Обду́маты, to deliberate, — | обду́мываты, — |
| Отдѣ́ляты, to finish, — | отдѣ́лываты, — |
| Заиѓрааты, to play, — | заиѓрывать, — |
| Оку́таты, to wrap about, — | оку́тывать, — |
| Промо́таты, to squander, — | прома́тывать, — |
| Смѣ́шаты, to mingle, — | смѣ́шиваты, — |
| Узна́ты, to recognise, — | узнава́ты, — |
| Прико́ваты, to chain to, I. 2. | прико́вывать, — |
| Обрисо́ваты, to outline, — | обрисо́вывать, — |
| Осно́ваты, to found, — | осно́вывать, — |
| Завое́ваты, to conquer, — | завое́вывать, — |
| Прогу́ляты, to walk, I. 3. | прогу́ливать, — |
| Осмѣ́яты, to laugh at, — | осмѣ́иваты, — |
| Усы́яты, to sow, — | усы́вать, — |
| Ослабѣ́ты, to grow weak, I. 4. | ослабѣ́вать, — |
| Договѣ́ты, to fast, — | договѣ́иваты, — |
| Согрѣ́ты, to warm, — | согрѣ́вать, — |
| Зажа́рить, to roast, II. 1. | зажа́риваты, — |
| Усмотре́ты, to discern, — | усма́триваты, — |

1) *Perfect aspect.*2) *Imperfect asp.*

| | |
|--|---------------------------|
| Загорѣть, to be sunburnt, II. 1. | загарать, I. 1. |
| Выкроить, to cut out, — | выкраивать, — |
| Наклеить, to glue on, — | наклеивать, — |
| Выстроить, to build, — | выстраивать, — |
| Отстоять, to defend, — | отстаивать, — |
| Отпороть, to unrip, — | отпарывать, — |
| Окормить, to poison, II. 2. | окармливать, — |
| Выводить, to catch all, — | вываживать, — |
| Вытерпеть, to endure, — | вытерпывать, — |
| Вскипеть, to boil up, — | вскипать, — |
| Вылечить, to heal, II. 3. | вылечивать, — |
| Упрочить, to secure, — | упрочивать, — |
| Заслужить, to deserve, — | заслуживать, — |
| Умолчать, to keep secret, — | умалчивать, — |
| Слать, to arrange, II. 4. | слаживать, — |
| Показать, to show, — | показывать, — |
| Привязать, to bind, — | привязывать, — |
| Заколотить, to knock, II. 5. | заколачивать, — |
| Вымолотить, to thrash, — | вымалчивать, — |
| Выплакать, to weep out, — | выплакивать, — |
| Испросить, to ask, II. 6. | испрашивать, — |
| Подписать, to subscribe, — | подписывать, — |
| Вымостить, to pave, II. 7. | вымощивать, — |
| Взыскать, to exact, — | взыскивать, — |
| Утонуть, to drown, III. 1. | утопать, — |
| Вытянуть, to stretch, — | вытягивать, — |
| Увянуть, to wither, — | увядать, — |
| Загнуть, to bend, — | загибать, — |
| Всосать, to absorb, — | всасывать, — |
| Запереть, to shut, III. 2. | запирать, — |
| Вытереть, to rub out, — | вытирать, — |
| Умереть, to die, — | умирать, — |
| Отобрать, to choose out, <i>irr.</i> | отбирать, — |
| Прибить, to affix, — | прибивать, — |
| Прилить, to pour to, — | приливать, — |
| Выпить, to drink out, — | выпивать, — |
| Зашить, to sew up, — | зашивать, — |

1) *Perfect aspect.*2) *Imperfect asp.*

| | |
|--------------------------------------|-----------------|
| ВЫМЫТЬ, to wash out, III. 2. | ВЫМЫВАТЬ, I. 1. |
| ЗАКРЫТЬ, to cover, — | ЗАКРЫВАТЬ, — |
| УЖИТЬСЯ, to settle, | УЖИВАТЬСЯ, — |
| НАПѢТЬ, to tune, — | НАПѢВАТЬ, — |
| ПРОСПАТЬ, to sleep away, — | ПРОСЫПАТЬ, — |
| ЗАПЕЧЬ, to bake, — | ЗАПЕКАТЬ, — |
| ИЗСѢЧЬ, to cut out, — | ИЗСѢКАТЬ, — |
| СЪЕЗЪТЬ, to eat up, — | СЪЕЗДАТЬ, — |
| ВПЛЕСТЬ, to plait in, — | ВПЛЕТАТЬ, — |

б) In the verbs in *umb* of the II^d conjugation, the termination of the iterative aspect is often contracted into *ymb*, or into *amb* after a hissing consonant; this happens especially when the simple verb belongs to the class of the defective verbs, that is when the iterative aspect is varying. In this case the tonic accent is placed on the termination. Such are the following verbs:

1) *Perfect aspect.*2) *Imperfect asp.*

| | |
|--------------------------------------|------------------|
| ОБВИНИТЬ, to accuse, II. 1. | ОБВИНЯТЬ, I. 3. |
| УТОЛИТЬ, to appease, — | УТОЛЯТЬ, — |
| ПРИМИРИТЬ, to reconcile, — | ПРИМИРАТЬ, — |
| СОТВОРИТЬ, to create, — | СОТВОРАТЬ, — |
| ИСПЕСТРИТЬ, to variegate, — | ИСПЕЩРАТЬ, — |
| РАЗМЫСЛИТЬ, to meditate, — | РАЗМЫШЛЯТЬ, — |
| УМУДРИТЬСЯ, to grow wise, — | УМУДРАТЬСЯ, — |
| УХИТРИТЬСЯ, to use art, — | УХИЩРАТЬСЯ, — |
| ПОГУБИТЬ, to ruin, II. 2. | ПОГУБЛЯТЬ, — |
| УТОМИТЬ, to fatigue, — | УТОМЛЯТЬ, — |
| ПОТРАФИТЬ, to hit, — | ПОТРАФЛЯТЬ, — |
| ОСЛЕПИТЬ, to blind, — | ОСЛЕПЛЯТЬ, — |
| ПОСПѢШИТЬ, to hasten, II. 3. | ПОСПѢШАТЬ, I. 1. |
| СОВЕРШИТЬ, to perfect, — | СОВЕРШАТЬ, — |
| ОЗНАЧИТЬ, to denote, — | ОЗНАЧАТЬ, — |
| ОТЯГЧИТЬ, to burden, — | ОТЯГЧАТЬ, — |

1) *Perfect aspect.*2) *Imperfect asp.*

| | |
|---------------------------------------|-------------------|
| Повредить, to damage, II. 4. | повреждать, I. 1. |
| Побудить, to incite, — | побуждать, — |
| Приблизить, to draw near, — | приближать, — |
| Замѣтить, to remark, II. 5. | замѣчать, — |
| Погасить, to put out, II. 6. | погашать, — |
| Обольтить, to seduce, II. 7. | обольтать, — |
| Отомстить, to avenge, — | отмщать, — |
| Посвятить, to hallow, — | посвящать, — |

c) Sometimes in the same verb the imperfect aspect is formed in two ways, with contraction and without contraction. Here we must remark that, if the prepositional verb retains its primitive, simple, physical meaning, the termination of its imperfect aspect is without contraction, and that on the contrary it is contracted, if the prepositional verb takes an abstract, figurative, intellectual acceptance, as is seen in the following examples:

1) *Perfect aspect.*2) *Imperfect asp.*1) *Perfect aspect.*2) *Imperfect asp.*

| | |
|---|--|
| Разбранить, to scold, II. 1. разбранивать, I. 1. & Возбранить, to forbid, I. 1. . возбранять, I. 3. | |
| Запалить, to kindle, — . запаливать, —, & Воспалить, to inflame, — . воспалить, — | |
| Переполюнуть, to fill, — . переполюнчивать, —, & Исполнить, to fulfil, — . исполнять, — | |
| Перестроить, to rebuild, — . перестраивать, —, & Устроить, to arrange, — . устроить, — | |
| Завострить, to sharpen, — . завастривать, —, & Поострить, to excite, — . поощрять, — | |
| Изловить, to catch, II. 2. излавливать, —, & Уловить, to surprise, II. 2. уловлять, — | |
| Подмочить, to wet, II. 3. подмачивать, —, & Омочить, to steep, II. 3. . омочать, I. 1. | |
| Выучать, to teach, — . выучивать, —, & Научить, to initiate, — . научать, — | |
| Загородить, to fence, II. 4. загороживать, —, & Оградить, to guard, II. 4. . ограджать, — | |
| Пересудить, to rejudge, — . пересуживать, —, & Осудить, to condemn, — . осуждать, — | |
| Осадить, to plant, — . осаживать, —, & Осадить, to besiege, — . осажждать, — | |
| Выпередить, to outgo, — . выперёживать, —, & Предупредить, to prevent, — . предупреждать, — | |
| Вывердить, to rehearse, — . вывёрживать, —, & Утвердить, to affirm, — . утверждать, — | |
| Помутить, to muddy, II. 5. помучивать, —, & Возмутить, to raise, II. 7. . возмущать, — | |
| Засветить, to light, — . засвѣчивать, —, & Просветить, to enlighten, — . просвѣщать, — | |
| Закрасить, to colour, II. 6. закрашивать, —, & Украсить, to adorn, II. 6. . украшать, — | |
| Загоститься, to visit, II. 7. загашиваться, —, & Угостить, to regale, II. 7. . угощать, — | |

d) The inchoative verbs in *нѣтъ*, which by their nature have not the iterative aspect, take, in the

formation of the imperfect aspect of prepositional verbs, the termination *amb*, e. g.

| 1) <i>Perfect aspect.</i> | 2) <i>Imperfect asp.</i> |
|--|--------------------------|
| Замёрзнуть, to freeze, III. 1. | замерзать, I. 1. |
| Потухнуть, to go out, — | потухать, — |
| Погибнуть, to perish, — | погибать, — |
| Окиснуть, to grow sour, — | окисать, — |
| Утихнуть, to abate, — | утихать, — |
| Погаснуть, to go out, — | погасать, — |
| Озябнуть, to starve, — | озябать, — |
| Замокнуть, to grow wet, — | замокать, — |
| Иссохнуть, to dry up, — | иссыхать, — |
| Издохнуть, to die, — | издыхать, — |
| Привыкнуть, to habituate, — | привыкать, — |
| Исчезнуть, to vanish, — | исчезать, — |

c) The Russian language has some prepositional verbs, the simple verb of which is no more used or is lost. Such are:

| 1) <i>Perfect aspect.</i> | 2) <i>Imperfect asp.</i> |
|---|--------------------------|
| Оправдять, to justify, I. 1. | оправдывать, I. 1. |
| Обнародовать, to publish, I. 2. | обнародывать, — |
| Затянуть, to devise, I. 3. | затягивать, — |
| Одолеть, to surmount, I. 4. | одолевать, — |
| Укоренить, to root, II. 1. | укоренять, I. 3. |
| Водворить, to settle, — | водворять, — |
| Разорить, to ruin, — | разорять, — |
| Ударить, to strike, — | ударять, — |
| Повторить, to repeat, — | повторять, — |
| Истребить, to destroy, II. 2. | истреблять, — |
| Одушевить, to animate, — | одушевлять, — |
| Усыновить, to adopt, — | усыновлять, — |
| Надоумить, to instruct, — | надоумливать, I. 1. |
| Приложить, to add, II. 3. | прилагать, — |
| Уничижить, to humble, — | уничижать, — |

1) *Perfect aspect.*2) *Imperfect asp.*

| | |
|--|-------------------|
| Уничтожить, to annihil. II. 3. | уничтожать, I. 1. |
| Вооружить, to arm, — | вооружать, — |
| Внушить, to suggest, — | внушать, — |
| Вручить, to hand, — | вручать, — |
| Истощить, to exhaust, — | истощать, — |
| Соорудить, to erect, II. 4. | сооружать, — |
| Победить, to vanquish, — | побуждать, — |
| Усладить, to delight, — | улаживать, — |
| Пронзить, to pierce, — | пронзать, — |
| Обидеть, to offend, — | обижать, — |
| Встретить, to meet, II. 5. | встречать, — |
| Отвѣтить, to answer, — | отвѣчать, — |
| Воскресить, to revive, II. 6. | воскрешать, — |
| Помѣстить, to place, II. 7. | помѣщать, — |
| Подушить, to instigate, — | подушать, — |
| Посѣтить, to visit, — | посѣщать, — |
| Укrotить, to appease, — | укрoщать, — |
| Насытить, to satiate, — | насыщать, — |
| Защитить, to protect, — | защищать, — |
| Достигнуть, to reach, III. 1. | достигать, — |
| Воскреснуть, to resuscitate, — | воскресать, — |
| Окунуть, to dip, — | окунывать, — |
| Замкнуть, to lock, — | замыкать, — |
| Ушибить, to bruise, — | ушибать, — |
| Простерть, to extend, III. 2. | простира́ть, — |
| Обуть, to put shoes, <i>irr.</i> | обувать, — |
| Попрать, to trample, — | попирать, — |
| Распять, to crucify, — | распина́ть, — |
| Начать, to begin, — | начина́ть, — |
| Отнять, to take out, — | отнима́ть, — |
| Отверзти, to open, — | отверза́ть, — |
| Обрести, to find out, — | обрета́ть, — |
| Счесть, to count, — | счита́ть, — |
| Разсвѣсти, to grow light, — | разсвѣта́ть, — |
| Запрячь, to put to, — | запряга́ть, — |

Among these verbs there are several which are also used with other prepositions besides those which are above indicated.

f) The following verbs do not form their perfect aspect from the imperfect aspect of the used simple verb, but from some disused aspect of this simple verb.

1) Perfect aspect.

2) Imperfect aspect.

Замѣнить, II. 1 (instead of *замѣнѣть*). замѣнять, to compensate, I. 3.
 Застрѣлить, — (instead of *застрѣлѣть*). застрѣливать, to shoot, kill, I. 1.
 Вскочить, II. 3 (instead of *вскака́ть*) . . . вска́кивать, to leap in, —
 Укусить, II. 6 (instead of *укуса́ть*) . . . уку́сывать, to bite, —
 Возвѣстить, II. 7 (instead of *возве́щѣть*). возвѣщать, to announce, —
 Поглотить, — (instead of *поглоти́ть*) . поглѣщѣть, to swallow up, —

g) Some prepositional verbs are formed irregularly, and occasionally they have two formations, one regular, and the other irregular. Such are:

REGULAR FORMATION.

IRREGULAR FORMATION.

1) Perfect aspect.

2) Imperfect aspect.

1) Perfect aspect.

2) Imperfect aspect.

| | |
|---|---|
| Презрѣть, to despise, II. 1. . . презира́ть, I. 1 | & Обозрѣть, to examine, II. 1. обозрѣ́вать, I. 1. |
| Сыскать, to find, II. 7. сы́скивать, — | & Сниска́ть, to obtain, II. 7. снис́скывать, — |
| Обуздать, to curb, I. 1. обу́здывать, — | & Внзудать, to bridle, I. 1. внзудѣ́ывать, — |
| Создать, to build, <i>irr.</i> (созѣжду) созидать, — | & Созда́ть (созда́ть), создава́ть (создаю́), |
| Нагрести, to rake up, <i>irr.</i> нагребѣ́ть, — | & Погребетѣ́й, to bury, <i>irr.</i> погребѣ́ть, I. 1. |
| Позволить, to permit, II. 1. позволя́ть, I. 3 | & Уво́лнить, to discharge, II. 1. уво́лнять, I. 3. |
| Осмѣять, to deride, I. 3. осмѣ́ивать, I. 1 | & Насмѣ́яться, to laugh at, I. 3. насмѣ́яться, I. 1 |
| Обязать, to bind, II. 4. обяза́ывать, — | & Обяза́ть, to oblige, II. 4. обяза́ывать, — |
| Сравнить, to even, I. 3. сравни́вать, — | & Сравни́ть, to compare, II. 1. сравни́вать, — |
| Принять, to take, <i>irr.</i> (прѣму) принима́ть, — | & Вы́нуть, to take out, III. 1. вы́нимать, — |
| Прибѣжать, to run up, <i>irr.</i> прибѣ́гать, — | & Прибѣ́гнуть, to resort, III. 1. прибѣ́гать, — |

h) Other prepositional verbs have no perfect aspect and therefore fall into the class of defective simple verbs; such are the following:

| | |
|----------------------------|-------------------------------|
| Обожа́ть, to adore, I. 1. | Ожида́ть, to wait, I. 1. |
| Облада́ть, to dominate, — | Обита́ть, to habit, — |
| Объза́ть, to promise, — | Опаса́ться, to fear, — |
| Завѣща́ть, to bequeath, — | Обуре́вать, to agitate, — |
| Увѣща́вать, to exhort, — | Подража́ть, to imitate, — |
| Охужда́ть, to criticize, — | Подоба́ть, to be necessary, — |
| Осыза́ть, to touch, — | Порица́ть, to blame, — |

| | |
|--------------------------------|-------------------------------------|
| Подозрѣвать, to suspect, I. 1. | Ущербляться, to decrease, I. 3. |
| Сомнѣваться, to doubt, — | Сожалѣть, to take pity, I. 4. |
| Созерцать, to contemplate, — | Смыслить, to understand, II. 1. |
| Изобилловать, to abound, I. 2. | Состоять, to consist, — |
| Наслѣдовать, to inherit, — | Упрямиться, to be obstinate, II. 2. |
| Повиноваться, to obey, — | Содержать, to maintain, II. 3. |
| Привѣтствовать, to welcome, — | Предвидѣть, to foresee, II. 4. |
| Обонять, to scent, I. 3. | Походить, to resemble, — |
| Упражнять, to occupy, — | Зависѣть, to depend, II. 6. |

i) Lastly the following simple verbs have the properties of prepositional verbs, in other words they express the accomplishment of an action without being joined to a preposition and without having the termination of unity in *нѣтъ*. They are called *perfect simple* verbs. Some of them have also the *iterative* aspect.

| 1) <i>Perfect aspect.</i> | 2) <i>Imperfect aspect.</i> | 3) <i>Iterative asp.</i> |
|---------------------------------------|---------------------------------|--------------------------|
| Благословить, to bless, II. 2. | благословлять, I. 3. | — |
| Бросить, to throw, II. 6. | бросать, I. 1. | брасывать. |
| Быть, to be, <i>irr.</i> | бывать, — | бывывать. |
| Велѣть, to order, II. 1. | (велѣть) | велѣвывать. |
| Воротить, to turn, II. 5. | ворочать, I. 1. | ворачивать. |
| Дать, to give, <i>irr.</i> | давать, — (даю) | — |
| Дѣть, to put, <i>irr.</i> | дѣвать, — | — |
| Женить, to marry, II. 1. | (женить) | — |
| Казнить, to execute, II. 1. | (казнить) | — |
| Кончить, to end, II. 3. | кончать, — | канчивать. |
| Купить, to buy, II. 2. | (покупать). — | — |
| Лечь, to lie, <i>irr.</i> | ложиться, II. 3. | — |
| Лишить, to deprive, II. 3. | лишать, I. 1. | — |
| Пасть, to fall, <i>irr.</i> | падать, — | (падать). |
| Плѣнить, to captivate, II. 1. | плѣнять, I. 3. | — |
| Простить, to pardon, II. 7. | прощать, I. 1. | — |
| Пустить, to let go, — | пускать and пущать, — | — |
| Ранить, to hurt, II. 1. | (ранить) | — |
| Родить, to beget, II. 4. | рожать and раждать, — | — |

| 1) Perfect aspect. | 2) Imperfect aspect. | 3) Iterative asp. |
|---|---|-------------------|
| Рѹшѣть, to break down, II. 3. | рѹшѣть) | рѹшѣвать. |
| Рѣшѣть, to decide, II. 3. | рѣшѣть, — | — |
| Свободѣть, to deliver, II. 4. | свободѣть, — | — |
| Стать, { to become, irr. становѣться, II. 2. | становѣться, II. 2. | становѣиваться. |
| Стать, { to be sufficient, irr. ставѣть, I. 1. (стаю) | ставѣть, I. 1. (стаю) | — |
| Ступѣть, to go, II. 2. | ступѣть, — | — |
| Сѣсть, to sit, irr. | сѣдѣться, II. 4. | — |
| Хватѣть, to seize, II. 5. | хватѣть, I. 1. | хватѣивать. |
| Явѣть, to show, II. 2. | явѣть, I. 3. | — |
| Имѣть, to take, irr. | имѣть, I. 1. and II. 2 (имѣю & ѣмлю). — | — |

To the list of perfect simple verbs we must add some verbs taken from foreign languages and ending in *овать*, e. g. *атаковать*, to attack; *конфисковать*, to confiscate, which express both the perfect and imperfect aspects with the same termination and without preposition.

The verbs *велѣть*, *женѣть*, *казнѣть*, *рѣнѣть* and *рѹшѣть*, do not change their termination to form the perfect and imperfect aspects; the perfect future (*велю*, *женю*, *казню*, *рѣню* and *рѹшу*) is also used for the present. In the verb *купѣть*, the present and the imperfect preterit are borrowed from the prepositional verb *покупѣть*. The verbs *даровѣть*, to give; *миновѣть*, to pass, and *образовѣть*, to form, as well as the inflections *даровѣль*, *миновѣль* and *образовѣль*, are of the perfect aspect; but the inflections *дарю*, *мину* and *образую* are of the present. The verb *миновѣть* forms its future with *мину*, *минешь*, and the preterit has the two inflections *минуль* and *миновѣль*.

With regard to the perfect simple verbs we remark that in such of them as express a physical action, performed by a single motion (as *бросѣть*, *дать*, *дѣть*, *пасть*, *пустѣть*, *ступѣть*, *хватѣть*, *ятѣ*) the meaning of their perfect aspect is the same as that of the aspect of unity in complete verbs (§ 62).

These perfect simple verbs, with the exception of *благословѣть*, *женѣть*, *казнѣть*, *мшѣть*, *рѣнѣть* and *плѣнѣть*, form also prepositional verbs. Such are:

1) *Perfect aspect.*2) *Imperfect aspect.*

| | |
|--|-------------------|
| Забѣть, to forget, <i>irr.</i> | забыва́ть, I. 1. |
| Повелѣть, to order, II. 1. | повелѣва́ть, — |
| Разда́ть, to distribute, <i>irr.</i> | раздава́ть, — |
| Оде́ть, to dress, <i>irr.</i> | одева́ть, — |
| Раску́пить, to buy up, II. 2. | раскупа́ть, — |
| Зале́чь, to hide one's self, <i>irr.</i> | залега́ть, — |
| Упа́сть, to fall, <i>irr.</i> | упада́ть, — |
| Распрости́ться, to take leave, II. 7. | распроща́ться, — |
| Пропустити́, to let pass, — | пропуска́ть, — |
| Уродити́, to produce, II. 4. | урожа́ть, — |
| Разру́шить, to destroy, II. 6. | разруша́ть, — |
| Разрѣши́ть, to decide, — | разрѣша́ть, — |
| Освободи́ть, to free, II. 4. | освобождáть, — |
| Доста́ть, to procure, <i>irr.</i> | доставáть, — |
| Останови́ть, to stop, II. 2. | останавли́вать, — |
| Высту́пить, to go out, II. 2. | выступа́ть, — |
| Засѣсть, to sit, <i>irr.</i> | засѣда́ть, — |
| Изъя́вить, to indicate, II. 2. | изъявля́ть, I. 3. |

The verbs *бросить*, *воротить*, *кончить* and *хватить* have the two perfect aspects in their prepositional verbs, like those derived from the complete simple verbs, as we shall subsequently see. For the prepositional verbs derived from *ать*, see § 65. 3.

3. Such prepositional verbs as are derived from the *complete* simple verbs, have in addition to the preceding *perfect* and *imperfect* aspects, a second perfect aspect, which, being formed from the aspect of unity of the simple verb, indicates that the action has been or will be performed at one time and by a single movement, whereas the perfect aspect, which is formed from the imperfect aspect of the simple verb, indicates that the action has been or will be accomplished by various motions, and that occupied or will occupy a certain length of time.

The same remark applies to such prepositional verbs as are formed from certain double verbs, and also from the perfect simple verbs бросить, воротить, кончить and хватить; e. g.

1) *Perfect aspect.*2) *Imperfect aspect.*a) *of duration.*b) *of unity.*

| | | |
|------------------------|---------------------|-------------------------------------|
| Выболтать, I. 1. | выболтнуть, III. 1. | выбалтывать, to divulge, I. 1. |
| Накидать, — . | накинуть, — . . | накидывать, to heap up, — |
| Вспорхать, — . | вспорхнуть, — . | вспархивать, to flutter, — |
| Выпрыгать, — . | выпрыгнуть, — . | выпрыгивать, to skip out, — |
| Столкать, — . | столкнуть, — . | сталакивать, to push down, — |
| Захлопать, — . | захлопнуть, — . | захлопывать, to shut with a clap, — |
| Забрызгать, — . | забрызнуть, — . | забрызгивать, to besprinkle, — |
| Всовать, I. 2. | всунуть, — . . | всовывать, to shove in, — |
| Выклевать, — . | выклонуть, — . | выклёвывать, to peck out, — |
| Придавить, II. 2. | придавить, — . | придавливать, to press to, — |
| Окликать, II. 5. | окликнуть, — . | окликать, to call to, — |
| Сдуть, <i>irr.</i> . . | сдунуть, — . | сдувать, to blow off, — |
| Поджечь, — . | поджигнуть, — . | поджигать, to fire, — |
| Вывалить, I. 3. | вывалить, II. 1. | вываливать, to throw out, — |
| Прокатать, I. 1. | прокатить, II. 5. | прокатывать, to roll through, — |
| Выломать, — . | выломить, II. 2. | выламывать, to break out, — |
| Сронять, I. 3. | сронить, II. 1. | сранивать, to throw down, — |
| Вытащить, I. 1. | вытащить, II. 3. | вытаскивать, to pull out, — |
| Забросать, — . | забросить, II. 6. | забрасывать, to throw beyond, — |
| Сворочать, — . | своротить, II. 5. | сворачивать, to avert, — |
| Окончать, — . | окончить, II. 3. | оканчивать, to terminate, — |
| Захватать, — . | захватить, II. 5. | захватывать, to catch, — |

The simple verbs говорить, ловить, бить, брать and класть, to indicate an action performed by one movement, borrow their perfect aspect from another verb; as:

1) *Imperfect aspect.*2) *Perfect aspect. **a) *of duration.* b) *of unity.*

| | | |
|---------------------------------|--------------|-----------------|
| Говорить, to speak, say, II. 1. | поговорить . | сказать, II. 4. |
| Ловить, to seize, catch, II. 2. | изловить . . | поймать, I. 1. |

1) *Imperfect aspect.*2) *Perfect aspect.*

| | | |
|---------------------------------------|-----------------|------------------------------|
| | a) of duration. | b) of unity. |
| Бить, to beat, <i>irr.</i> | побить . . . | удáрить, II. 1. |
| Брать, to take, <i>irr.</i> | побрáть, . . | взять, <i>irr.</i> (возьму). |
| Класть, to lay, <i>irr.</i> | поклáсть . . | положить, II. 3. |

4. From the *double* simple verbs two prepositional verbs are formed, which with their two aspects, the *perfect* and the *imperfect*, have each a particular signification. Such are:

1) From the *definite* verb.2) From the *indefinite* verb.

| a) <i>Perfect asp.</i> | b) <i>Imperfect asp.</i> | a) <i>Perfect asp.</i> | b) <i>Imperfect asp.</i> |
|--|--------------------------|-------------------------------|--------------------------|
| Выбрести, <i>irr.</i> выбродить, to go out, II. 4. | & Выбродить, II. 4. | выбáживать, to ferment, I. 1. | |
| Выбьжать, — выбьгáть, to flee, I. 1. . . | & Выбьгáть, I. 1. | выбьгáивать, to precede, — | |
| Завезти, — завозить, to bring back, II. 4. | & Завозить, II. 4. | завáживать, to transport, — | |
| Провести, — проводить, to conduct, — | & Проводить, — | провожáть, to accompany, — | |
| Загнáть, — загонáть, to drive, I. 3. | & Загонáть, I. 3. | загáнивать, to harass, — | |
| Выйти, — . . . выхóдить, to go out, II. 4. | & Выхóдить, II. 4. | выхáживать, to obtain, — | |
| Влететь, II. 5. влетáть, to fly in, I. 1. . . | & Перелетáть, I. 1. | перелётывáть, to fly by, — | |
| Донести, <i>irr.</i> доносить, to denounce, II. 6. | & Доносить, II. 6. | донáпивать, to wear out, — | |
| Вползти, — . . . вползáть, to creep in, I. 1. | & Отползáть, I. 1. | отпáлзывать, to go away, — | |
| Выехать, — . . . выѣзжáть, to go out, I. 1. | & Выѣздить, II. 4. | выѣзживáть, to train, — | |

From the other double verbs are formed prepositional verbs as from the incomplete or complete verbs. The verbs *валить*, *катить*, *ломить*, *ронить* and *тащить* form prepositional verbs with the two perfect aspects of duration and of unity, as we have seen above.

EXERCISES ON THE VERBS.

Regular verbs. I do good, as much as I wish. Thou desirest in-
 — Я дѣлать добро, сколько я желать. Ты желать
Present. struct thyself. He imagines that he knows all the sciences,
 учиться. Онъ думать что онъ знать весь наука,
 and he boasts of his success. We dare not believe in
 и хвастать (*instr.*) свой успехъ. Я дерзать не верить (*dat.*)

your words, even when you speak the truth. My neighbours
ваше слово, хотя ты говорить правда. Мой соседъ

only live on bread, and trust in Providence.
одинъ питаться (*instr.*) хлѣбъ, и уповать на (*acc.*) Провидѣніе.

You trade in cloth, and you ask much.
Ты торговать (*instr.*) сукно, и ты трѣбовать (*gen.*) многое.

The pigeon cooes; the turtle moans; dogs bark; puppies
Голубь ворковать; горлица стонать; собака лаять; щенокъ

yelp; the frog croaks; the raven croaks; the crow caws;
блѣкать; лягушка квакать; воронъ глѣкать; ворона каркать;

lions roar; the stag bells; fowls cluck; the cat
левъ рычать; олѣнь токовать; курица кудахтать; кошка

mews; oxen bellow; the bee hums; the serpent hisses;
мяукаль; быкъ мычать; пчела жужжать; змѣя шипѣть;

eagles scream; nightingales twitter; sheep and lambs
орѣлъ трубѣть; соловей щебетать; овца и агненокъ

bleat; pigs grunt; the fox yelps; the ass brays; the
блѣять; свинья хрюкать; лисѣца визжать; осѣль реветъ;

turkey gobbles; the quail calls; the cock crows;
калѣунъ хлопать; перенѣлка вавѣкать; пѣтухъ кукурекать;

the magpie chatters; the parrot prates. The thunder roars;
сорока скрекотать; попугай болтать. Громъ гремѣть;

water boils; the doors creak; the brooks murmur; the fire
вода кипѣть; дверь скрипѣть; ручей жужжать; огонь

crackles; the stars twinkle; the sun shines; honey-bees
трещать; звѣзда сверкать; солнце свѣтитъ; пчела

swarm; diamonds sparkle; dry leaves rattle; the wind
роитьсѣ; алмазъ блестяль; сухой листь хрустѣть; вѣтеръ

whistles; the snow melts. The sun illumines the earth with
свистать; снѣгъ таять. Солнце озарять земля (*instr.*)

its rays, warms and vivifies her. The earth turns
свой лучъ, грѣть и живить онъ. Земля обращаться
round the sun. You grieve in vain.
вокругъ (*gen.*) солнце. Ты горевать напрасно.

Preterit. I walked yesterday on the bank of the river, when
Я гулять вчера по (*dat.*) берегъ рѣка, когда
the sun was setting. My sister sat under a tree,
солнце садиться. Мой сестра сидѣть поды (*instr.*) дѣрево,
which was shaken by the wind. Yesterday we worked,
который качаться (*instr.*) вѣтеръ. Вчера я работать,
read, wrote and drew much. The sheep perished
читать, писать и рисовать много. Овца мерѣть
through the cold. His mother has been dead a long time.
отъ (*gen.*) стужа. Онъ мать умерѣть давно.

The enemies have shut him up in the fortress. This
Непріятель заперѣть онъ въ (*prep.*) крѣпость. Этотъ
man has become blind, and his wife has become deaf. My
человѣкъ ослѣпнуть, и онъ жена оглохнуть. Мой
trees have withered, and my flowers have faded.
дѣрево высохнуть, и мой цвѣтъ завянуть.

Future. Moscow will shine long at the head of the cities
Москвѣ красоваться долго во (*prep.*) главѣ городъ
of Russia. Thou wilt play, and I shall write. The empire
русскій. Ты играть, и я писать. Государство
of Russia will develop itself incessantly, and acquire constantly
Россійскій возвышаться безпрерывно, и приобрѣтать всегда
more force and glory. A great monarch will never
болѣе (*gen.*) сила и слава. Великій государь не никогда
die.
умерѣть.

Imperative. Do what thou art bidden, and do not think of resisting.
Дѣлать что ты говорить, и не думать упрямиться.

Do not lose hope, and trust in God. Go home,
 Не терять надежда, и уповать на (acc.) Богъ. Ступать домой,
 and do not dispute so much. Do not lose thy time, and
 и не толковать столько. Не тратить (gen.) время, и
 do not torment the animals. Speak always the truth, and
 не мучить (gen.) животное. Говорить всегда правда, и
 do not dispute about trifles.
 не спорить о (prep.) пустякъ.

The nightingale sings; the horse neighs; the wolf howls. Irregular
 Соловей пѣть; лошадь ржать; волкъ выть. verbs.

There are animals which sleep during the whole winter.
 Быть зверь, который спать (acc.) весь зима.

Thou takest much upon thyself, and I do not under-
 Ты брать много на (acc.) себя, и я не браться
 take this affair. How do you crumple this book? Не
 за (acc.) этотъ дѣю. Зачѣмъ ты мять этотъ книга. Онъ
 lives at Moscow, and is thought to be a rich man.
 жить въ (prep.) Москва, и слыть (instr.) богатый человекъ.

The shepherd shears the sheep; the peasants spin the flax
 Пастухъ стрижь овца; крестьянинъ прясть лёнъ
 and weave the linen. He wishes to sleep, and you wish
 и ткать жолсть. Онъ хотѣть спать, и ты хотѣть
 to play. My neighbour kept me as his own son, and could
 играть. Мой сосѣдъ беречь я какъ родной сынъ, и мочь
 not part with me. The enemies have burnt several
 не разстаться со (instr.) я. Непріятель сжечь много
 towns; they were inflamed by hatred and vengeance. The
 городъ; онъ увлечься (instr.) злоба и мщеніе.

shepherd pastured the sheep in the meadow. I will send
 Пастухъ пастіи овца на (prep.) лугъ. Я послать
 for the doctor, and thou wilt send me money. This
 за (instr.) лѣкарь, и ты прислать я (gen.) деньги. Этотъ

town is flourishing, and it will flourish long through its
 ГОРОДЪ ЦВѢСТИ, и ОНЪ ЦВѢСТИ ДОЛГО (*instr.*)

strength and wealth. I will give thee a book, and thou, what
 СИЛА и БОГАТСТВО. Я ДАТЬ ТЫ КНИГА, и ТЫ ЧТО
 wilt thou give me? Thou canst not say: what will he give
 ДАТЬ Я? ТЫ МОЧЬ НЕ ГОВОРИТЬ: ЧТО ОНЪ ДАТЬ

me for that? Do not take upon thyself,
 Я ЗА (*acc.*) ЭТОТЪ? НЕ БРАТЬ НА (*acc.*) СЕБЯ (*gen.*) ТОТЪ (*gen.*)
 what thou canst not perform. Children, live in peace, do not
 ЧТО ТЫ МОЧЬ НЕ ИСПОЛНИТЬ. ДѢТЯ, ЖИТЬ ЖИРНО, НЕ
 swear, never lie, and behave yourselves well.
 КЛЯСТЬСЯ, НЕ НИКОГДА ЛГАТЬ, и ВЕСТИ СЕБЯ ХОРОШЕНЫКО.

Definite and
 indefinite
 imperfect
 aspect.

Beasts walk and run, birds and flies fly, fishes
 ЗВѢРЬ ХОДИТЬ и БѢГАТЬ, ПТИЦА и МУХА ЛЕТАТЬ, РЫБА
 swim, and worms crawl. See, a soldier is coming
 ПЛАВАТЬ, и ЧЕРВЬ ПОЛЗАТЬ. ПОСМОТРЕТЬ, СОЛДАТЪ ИДТИ
 here; behind him runs a dog. Thou seest, how this
 СЮДА; ЗА (*instr.*) ОНЪ ОБЖАТЬ СОБАКА. ВИДѢТЬ, КАКЪ ЭТОТЪ
 swallow flies fast; they fly always so. This mariner
 ЛАСТОЧКА ЛЕТЕТЬ БЫСТРО; ОНЪ ЛЕТАТЬ ВСЕГДА ТАКЪ. СЕЙ МОРЯКЪ
 has long sailed on the Black Sea. What is swimming
 ДОЛГО ПЛАВАТЬ ПО (*daz.*) ЧЕРНЫЙ МОРЕ. ЧТО . ПЛЫТЬ
 there on the water? The wives of the Slavonians carried
 ТАМЪ НА (*prep.*) ВОДА? ЖЕНА СЛАВЯНИНЪ НОСИТЬ
 water and fetched wood. What dost thou carry in
 ВОДА и ТАСКАТЬ ДРОВА. ЧТО ТЫ НЕСТИ ВЪ (*prep.*)
 this bag? See, what a heap of wood this
 ЭТОТЪ МЕШОКЪ? СМОТРЕТЬ, КАКОЙ ВЯЗАНКА ДРОВА ЭТОТЪ
 man is drawing. One saw then what one had not
 ЧЕЛОВѢКЪ ТАЩИТЬ. ВИДѢТЬ ТОГДА (*gen.*) ЧТО НЕ
 seen for a long time.
 ВИДАТЬ ДОТѢЛЪ.

The enemy dashed into the town and seized the booty. *Perfect aspect of duration and of unity.*
 Непріятель рѣяться въ (acc.) городъ и кидаться на (acc.) городъ.
 It began to lighten. It lightened, there was a violent clap of thunder, the earth trembled, the church creaked.
 Засверкать молнія. Сверкать молнія, греметь громъ, земля дрожать, церковь трястись.
 My brother went to bed, and began to snore. He gave a loud snore and awoke. May I hope, that my lyre will touch once more your hard heart? The sun began to shine, but not for a long time; it shone for a moment and disappeared. We have thrown out of the window all the sweepings; among the sweepings we have thrown out also a paper of importance.
 Мой братъ лечь и захрапеть.
 Храпеть громко и просыпаться. Мочь я надѣяться, что мой лира трогать ещё вашъ хладный сердце? Солнце заблестать, но не надолго; блеснуть и скрыться. Я выбрасывать за (acc.) окно весь соръ; въ (pref.) соръ я выбрасывать бумага важная.

Last year I often went to the town. *Iterative aspect.*
 (gen.) Прѣшлый годъ я ходить въ (acc.) городъ. Сократъ was accustomed to say. The Germans had long inhabited Novgorod. When living at Moscow, I often went to the monastery of the Trinity. In my youth I often lived in the country.
 Прѣшлый годъ я ходить въ (acc.) городъ. Сократъ говорилъ. Нѣмецъ издавна жить въ (pref.) Новгородъ. Жить въ (pref.) Москвѣ, я ѣздить въ (acc.) Лавра Троицкій. Въ (acc.) молодой лѣто я жить въ (pref.) деревня.

If the stones could speak, they would teach thee. *Conditional and Subjunctive.*
 Если бы камень мочь говорить, онъ научить бы ты

prudence. If any one had come to us (*gen.*) острожность. Если бы кто нибудь войти къ (*dat.*) я at this moment, he would have seen us in despair въ (*acc.*) этотъ минута, онъ увидѣть бы я въ (*prep.*) отчаяніе, and would have heard our groans and our sighs. There и услышать бы нашъ стenanіе и нашъ вздохъ. Есть are few things in the world, on which I маю (*gen.*) предметъ въ (*prep.*) свѣтъ, на (*acc.*) который я have not fixed my attention. There was no heart не обращать бы (*gen.*) вниманіе. Быть (*gen.*) не сердце so insensible that it did not melt into tears. такой каменный, который не плавяться бы въ (*prep.*) слеза.

The different tenses and aspects.

This soldier has served long and has received for his ЭТОТЪ солдатъ служить долго и выслуживать service a pension. It is not every soldier that will obtain пенсія. Не всякій выслуживать it with such distinction. He was in many онъ съ (*instr.*) такой отличіе. Онъ быть въ (*prep.*) много battles and distinguished himself everywhere by his resраженіе, и отличаться вездѣ (*instr.*) бшста-markable courage. He distinguished himself particularly тельный храбрость. Онъ отличаться особенно at the capture of a battery of the enemies. He mounted при (*prep.*) взятіе батарее неприяТЕЛЬскій. Онъ взбираться first on the parapet, killed the hostile soldier, and первый на (*acc.*) брустверъ, убивать неприяТЕЛЬскій солдатъ, и captured a cannon. For that he was rewarded by a взять пушка. За (*acc.*) это онъ награждать (*instr.*) decoration. Afterwards he was rewarded also with other орденъ. Потомъ онъ награждать и (*instr.*) другой marks of distinction. Now he will return to his country, отличіе. Теперь онъ отправляться въ (*acc.*) родина,

will establish himself with his family, and will relate
 поселяться въ (*prep.*) свой семьѣ, и разсказывать о (*prep.*)
 his campaigns, how he marched against the Turks and
 свой походъ, какъ ходить на (*acc.*) Турокъ и
 the French, how he beat the enemy, how he endured hunger,
 Французъ, какъ бить врагъ, какъ терпѣть голодъ,
 suffered from his wounds, and consoled himself with the
 страдать отъ (*gen.*) рана, и утѣшаться (*instr.*)
 thought that he is serving his sovereign with heart and
 мысль, что онъ служить (*dat.*) свой Государь (*instr.*) сердце и
 soul. Trust in me.
 душа. Уповать на (*acc.*) я.

THE PARTICIPLE.

66.—The *participles* (причастія) have, as a part Division of the verb (§ 53) *voice*, *aspect* and *tense*, and, as the parti-
 adjectives, that they may agree with their sub-
 stantive, they have *gender*, *number* and *case*. As
 regards voice, they are *active* or *neuter* (or, with
 the pronoun *я*, pronominal) and *passive*. They
 have the same number of aspects as the verbs
 whence they are derived, but they have only two
 tenses, the *present* and *preterit*.

67.—The *active* and *neuter* (as also the prono- Active and
 minal) participles are formed as follows: neuter parti-
 ciples.

1. The *present* participle is formed from the third
 person plural of the present indicative by changing
 the termination *тѣ* into *щій* (neut. *щие*, fem. *щая*),
 and this without any exception; e. g. дѣлающій,

making; любя́щій, *loving*; крича́щій, *crying*; не-
су́щій, *bearing* (from дѣлаю́тъ, любя́тъ, крича́тъ,
несу́тъ).

2. The *preterit* or past participle is formed from the preterit indicative, by changing *лѣ* into *вшій*, and *ѣ* (in such verbs as have not *лѣ* in the preterit) into *шій* (neut. *шее*, fem. *шая*); e. g. дѣлав́шій, *having made*; носив́шій, *having borne*; поту́хшій, *being extinguished*; трё́шій, *having rubbed* (from дѣла́лѣ, носі́лѣ, поту́хѣ, трё́ѣ). An exception to this rule is found in some irregular verbs in *ѣу* and *мѣу*, which, though forming their preterit in *лѣ*, change *у* of the present (or of the future) into *шій*; these are: блю́дшій, *having kept*; вед́шій, *having lead*; па́дшій (and па́вшій), *having fallen*; пряд́шій, *having spun*; плёт́шій, *having plaited*; мет́шій, *having swept*; обрѣ́тшій, *having found*; цвѣ́тшій, *having flowered* (from блю́дѣу, вед́ѣу, па́дѣу, пряд́ѣу, плет́ѣу, мет́ѣу, обрѣ́тѣу and цвѣ́тѣу), and also увѣ́дшій, *being faded*; шѣ́дшій, *having gone*; чѣ́тшій, *having counted* (from увѣ́дѣу, идѣу and чѣ́тѣу).

Passive
participles.

68.—The *passive* participles, which are only formed from active verbs, are used both with the full and the apocopated termination, ending: *a*) in the *present*, in *емый*, *имый* or *омый* (neut. *ое*, fem. *ая*) in the full, and in *емѣ*, *имѣ* or *омѣ* (neut. *о*, fem. *а*) in the apocopated termination, *b*) in the *preterit*, in *нмый* or *мый* (neut. *ое*, fem. *ая*) in the full, and in *нѣ* or *мѣ* (neut. *о*, fem. *а*) in the apocopated termination.

1. The *present* participle is formed from the first person plural of the present indicative, by chang-

ing the termination *лѣ* into *мый*, as: *дѣлаемый*, *being made*; *любимый*, *being loved* (from *дѣлаемъ* and *любимъ*). But *движу*, *I move*, and *борю*, *I conquer*, from *движимый* and *боримый* (instead of *движемый* and *боремый*). The irregular verbs with the first person in *ѣмъ* (i. e. with the accent), have *омый*, resuming the guttural consonant; e. g. *зовомый*, *being called*; *трясомый*, *being shaken*; *берегомый*, *being kept*; *пекомый*, *being baked* (from *зовѣмъ*, *трясѣмъ*, *бережѣмъ*, *печѣмъ*), and in like manner *сосомый*, *being sucked*; *пскомый*, *being sought* (from *сосѣмъ* and *ищѣмъ*).

2. The *preterit* participle is formed of the preterit of the indicative by changing *лѣ* of the terminations *а.лѣ*, *я.лѣ* and *н.лѣ*, into *нный* with permutation of the commutable consonants or with intercalation of the consonant *л*, as also in the first person of the present; *лѣ* and *ѣ* of the terminations *олѣ*, *ну.лѣ* and *ѣ*, into *тый*; e. g. *дѣланный*, *done*; *разсѣянный*, *dispersed*; *видѣнный*, *seen*; *палѣнный*, *burnt*; *явлен- ный*, *shown*; *винченый*, *screwed*; *колотый*, *pricked*; *двинутый*, *moved*; *тѣртый*, *rubbed* (from *дѣла.лѣ*, *разсѣя.лѣ*, *видѣ.лѣ*, *па.лѣ.лѣ*, *явѣ.лѣ*, *винтѣ.лѣ*, *колѣ.лѣ*, *дви.ну.лѣ*, *тѣрѣ*).

The passive participles of the irregular verbs, which also present some irregularities in their formation, have been given in the List of the irregular verbs, pages 138—141.

69.—The participles, being used as adjectives, and as such agreeing with their substantive in gender, number and case, are declined like the qualifying adjectives (§ 40, parad. 4). The active and neuter participles are only used in the full ter-

Declension
of the
participles.

mination, while the passive participles are used both in the full and the apocopated.

Passive
verbs.

70.—The passive participles, both present and preterit, with the apocopated termination, joined to the auxiliary verb *быть*, form what is called the passive verb (страдательные глаголы); e. g. сынъ *(есть)* любимъ своимъ отцемъ, *the son is loved by his father*; ученикъ былъ награждёнъ за прилежаніе, *the scholar has been rewarded for his assiduity*. We have here to remark that from the present and preterit of the passive participles are formed two aspects of the passive verb: the imperfect and the perfect aspect. As regards the present, preterit and future tenses, they are determined by the auxiliary verb *быть*, as seen below.

1) *Imperfect asp.*

2) *Perfect asp.*

- | | | |
|----------------------|------------------------------|-----------------------------|
| 1. <i>Present</i> : | я <i>(есть)</i> награждаемъ. | я <i>(есть)</i> награждёнъ. |
| 2. <i>Preterit</i> : | я былъ награждаемъ. | я былъ награждёнъ. |
| 3. <i>Future</i> : | я буду награждаемъ. | я буду награждёнъ. |

EXERCISES ON THE PARTICIPLES.

Active and
neuter par-
ticiples.

The man who loves truth, hates falsehood. The child
Человѣкъ любить правду, ненавидѣть ложь. Дитя
that bathes; the dog that attacks passers by. The
купаться; собака бросаться на (acc.) прохожій.
tradesman who received the goods from London,
Купецъ, получать товаръ изъ (gen.) Лондонъ,
sold them advantageously. The tradesman who has received
продавать онъ выгодно. Купецъ получить
the goods from London, has sold them advantageously.
товаръ изъ (gen.) Лондонъ, продать онъ выгодно.

Suffering from illness, he seeks relief. Light
 Страда́ть (*instr.*) боле́знь, иска́ть (*gen.*) облегче́ние. Заже́чь
 the candle which has gone out, and wipe the window
 свеча́ поту́хнуть, и вы́тереть сте́кло
 which is frozen. Glory to the hero who has saved his
 замёрзнуть. Сла́ва геро́ю спа́сти свой
 country. The roaring lion, the bellowing ox, the barking
 оте́чество. Рыка́ть ле́въ, мыча́ть бы́къ, ла́ять
 dog, the crowing cock, the cooing dove, express their
 соба́ка, петь пту́хъ, воркова́ть го́лубь, выража́ть свой
 feelings and wants.
 чу́ство и жела́ние.

The sea agitated by the winds frightens the sailors. *Passive participles.*
 Мо́ре, волнува́ть ве́теръ, устраша́ть пло́вецъ.

The daughter beloved by her father, seeks to deserve his
 До́чь, люби́ть оте́цъ, иска́ть заслужи́вать онъ
 love. One must succour the unfortunate man, harassed
 люблю́. Дол́жно помога́ть (*dat.*) несчастны́й, гна́ть
 by fate and pursued by disasters. This is skimmed milk,
 судьба́ и преслѣ́довать неуда́ча. Э́тотъ сня́ть моло́ко,
 and here is rappee snuff. It is a loaded gun. In the
 и вотъ тере́ть таба́къ. Э́тотъ заря́дить ружьё. На (*prep.*)
 market they sell killed geese, tarred ropes, little
 рыно́къ продава́ться битъ гу́съ, смоли́ть верё́вка, откорми́ть
 sucking pigs, and shorn sheep.
 поросёно́къ и стри́чь овца́.

Russia is inhabited by various nations. Good sovereigns *Passive verbs.*
 Росси́я обита́ть (*instr.*) мно́го наро́дъ. До́брый госуда́рь
 are loved by their subjects and respected by their neighbours.
 люби́ть свой по́дданны́й и уважа́ть сосѣ́дь.

The Tartars have been vanquished and defeated in the
 Тата́ринъ побѣди́ть и разби́ть на (*prep.*)

plains of Koulikof. Thy labours will be crowned with
 побѣ Куликовѣ. Твой трудъ увѣнчать (*instr.*)
 success. Nouns are declined, and verbs conjugated. This
 успѣхъ. Имя склонять и глаголъ спрягать. Сей
 great captain will be revered by posterity. Москва
 великій полководецъ чтить въ (*prep.*) потомство. Москвѣ
 has been devastated and burnt by the enemies. This gun
 разорить и сжечь врагъ. Этотъ ружьё
 is charged. This book is well bound.
 зарядить. Этотъ книга прекрасно переплетать.

THE ADVERB AND THE GERUND.

Division of
 the adverbs.

71.—The *adverbs* (нарѣчія) are divided into different classes according to their meaning:

1. Adverbs of *quality* or *manner* (нарѣчія качествъ), e. g. такъ, *thus*; иначе, *otherwise*; хорошо, *well*; худо, *badly*; нарочно, *intentionally*; скоро, *quickly*; напрасно, *in vain*; наугадъ, *at random*; заодно, *by agreement*; по-своему, *in one's own way*, &c.

2. Adverbs of *time* (времени), e. g. вчера, *yesterday*; сегодня, *to-day*; завтра, *to-morrow*; утромъ, *in the morning*; вечеромъ, *in the evening*; нынѣ, *now*; теперѣ, *at present*; тогда, *then*; послѣ, *afterwards*; прежде, *before*; иногда, *sometimes*; тотчасъ, *presently*, &c.

3. Adverbs of *place* (мѣста): a) such as indicate a place without motion: здѣсь, *here*; тамъ, *there*; нигдѣ, *nowhere*; дома, *at home*; вездѣ, *everywhere*; b) such as indicate the place to which the action

is directed: *сюда, hither; туда, thither; нигуда, nowhere; домой, home; всюду, everywhere; c) such as indicate the place whence the action proceeds; e. g. отсюда, from here; оттуда, from there; извне, from without; снаруж, from the exterior; отовсюду, from all sides, &c.*

4. Adverbs of *order* (порядка); e. g. во-первыхъ, *firstly*; во-вторыхъ, *secondly*; потомъ, *subsequently*, &c.

5. Adverbs of *quantity* (количества); e. g. довольно, *enough*; мало, *little*; много, *much*; нѣсколько, *some*, &c.

6. *Implicit* (замѣнительныя) adverbs, as: да, *yes*; нѣтъ, *no*; молъ, де, *says he*, &c.

7. *Interrogative* (вопросительныя) adverbs; e. g. когда, *when?* доко́ль, *how long?* гдѣ, *where* (without motion)? куда, *where* (with motion)? откуда, *whence?* сколько, *how much?* зачѣмъ, *why?* &c.

72.—Adverbs are for the most part derivatives, being formed from nouns, adjectives, pronouns or verbs. Nouns in the instrumental and other cases are often employed adverbially: e. g. крѣгомъ, *in a circle*; верхомъ, *on horseback*; даромъ, *gratis*; на показъ, *for show*; въ торопяхъ, *in haste*, &c. Every qualifying adjective, in the apocopated termination of the neuter gender, can become an adverb, as: окрасить бѣло, *синѣ, to dye white, blue*; поступать хорошо, *to conduct himself well*. The possessive and circumstantial adjectives form adverbs of manner by means of the preposition *по*, as: по-человѣчьи, *as a man*; по-русски, *in Russian*;

Formation
of the ad-
verbs.

по-дру́жески, *as a friend*; по-звѣ́рному, *like beasts*; по-мо́ему, *according to my view*.

Degrees of comparison.

73.—The adverbs formed from qualifying adjectives admit of degrees of comparison; e. g. умно́, *wisely*, and умнѣ́, *more wisely*; хоро́шó, *well*, and лу́чше, *better*; покóрко, *humblý*, and всепоко́рнѣйше, *very humbly*. We must here remark that the comparative of the adverbs is the same as that of the adjectives in the apocopated termination, with the exception of the five adverbs: бо́льше, *more*; ме́нше, *less*; до́льше, *longer*; да́льше, *further*; то́нше, *more finely*, which must be distinguished from the adjectives бо́льше, *greater*; ме́ньше, *less*; до́льше, *longer*; да́льше, *more distant*; то́ньше, *finer*. The qualifying adverbs can also be used in the diminutive and augmentative aspects; e. g. спнева́то, *bluishly*; ма́ленько, *a little*; немно́жко, *not much*; поху́же, *a little worse*; преумно́, *very wisely*.

Gerunds.

74.—The *gerunds* (дѣеприча́стія) are nothing but *verbal adverbs* formed from active or neuter participles. They have two terminations in each of the two tenses, viz: *a*) in the *present*, я or (after a hissing letter) *a*, and ючи or учи, e. g. дѣлая́ and дѣлая́ючи, *in doing*; дыша́ and дышучи, *in breathing*; неся́ and несучи, *in bearing*; *b*) in the *preterit*, въ and вши; e. g. дѣлавъ́ and дѣлавши́, *after having done*; проси́въ and проси́вши, *having prayed*, remarking however that verbs which have not the letter л in the preterit, have only the termination ши, e. g. уме́рши, *being dead*; поту́хши, *being*

extinguished. The same is the case with the pronominal verbs; e. g. учившись, *after having learned*; возвратившись, *having returned*.

The full terminations of the gerunds *ючи* and *вши* are more commonly employed in familiar language, while the apocopated termination *я* and *въ* are more usual in the written tongue.

EXERCISES ON THE ADVERBS AND THE GERUNDS.

Come here, for I live here. Where is your brother? Adverbs.

Пойти сюда, ибо я жить здесь. Где ваш брат?

He is not at home. Where did he go yesterday evening? Онъ нѣтъ дома. Куда онъ побѣхалъ вчера вечеромъ?

Thou judgest wisely, and thy brother judges more wisely. I Ты судить умно, а твой брат . Я

walk quick, and thou walkest quicker. You speak Russian ходить шибко, а ты . Ты говорить по-русски

purely, and your sister speaks it more purely. To-morrow чисто, а вашъ сестрица . Завтра

we shall go very far, and in a year we shall go still я побѣхалъ очень далеко, а чрезъ (acc.) годъ ещё

further. Thou singest well, but she sings better. I beg . Ты пѣть хорошо, но онъ . Я просить

you very earnestly. I thank you very humbly.

ты убедительно. Я благодарить ты покорно.

While walking on the bank of the river, I enjoy Gerunds.

Гулять на (преп.) берегъ рѣки, я наслаждаться

the freshness of the evening. While pitying the unfortunate, (instr.) прохлада вечеръ. Жалѣть о (преп.) несчастный,

try to aid them. I instruct you, because I wish стараться помогать онъ. Я учить ты, желать

you well, and because I hope, that you will make progress
ты (*gen.*) добръ, и надѣяться, что ты успѣвать

in the sciences. When thou dost not know how to do
въ (*prep.*) наука. Не уметь дѣлать (*gen.*)

a thing, ask advice without blushing. Do right,
что нибѣдь, просить (*gen.*) совѣтъ, не краснѣть. Дѣлать добръ,

without fearing any man. One must not eat when
не бояться (*gen.*) никто. Дѣлать не ѣсть

lying down. In serving our country, and dying for
лежать. Служить (*dat.*) отечество, и умирать за (*acc.*)

it, we do our duty. Having received your letter, and
онъ, я исполнять свой долгъ. Получить вашъ письмѣ, и

having learned what you want, I have answered imme-
узнать (*gen.*) что ты желать, я отвѣчать немед-

diately. After having dined, stop at home. Having
дленно. Отобѣдать, оставаться дома. Напи-

written your letter, I placed it in an envelope, and
сать письмѣ, положить въ (*acc.*) кувѣртъ, и

sealed it, put it in the post. Having returned
запечатать, отдавать онъ на (*acc.*) почтѣ. Прийти

home, I set about writing. After being married, he repaired
домой, я съѣсть писать. Жениться, онъ поѣхать

to the country. Having remained an hour with him,
въ (*acc.*) деревня. Просидѣть (*acc.*) часъ у (*gen.*) онъ,

I returned home; after undressing myself and going to bed,
я пойти домой; раздѣваться и лечь,

I fell asleep immediately.
я уснуть скоро.

THE PREPOSITION.

75.—The *prepositions* (предлоги) of the Russian language are *simple* (безъ, на, по) or *compound* (изъ-за, изъ-подъ); the following is a general list of them:

Division of
the prepo-
sitions.

| | |
|--------------------------------------|---|
| Безъ (безо), without. | Отъ (ото), from; since; out of. |
| Вз- or воз- (взо), up, <i>sus-</i> . | По (па-), about; until; after. |
| Въ (во), in, into, to, at. | Подъ (подо-), under, underneath. |
| Вы-, out, without, <i>ex-</i> . | Пра-, (<i>indicating a removed relationship</i> ; пра́дѣтъ, <i>great grand-father</i>). |
| Для, for. | Пре- or пере-, beyond, <i>trans-</i> ; <i>re-</i> . |
| До, as far as, until. | Предъ or передъ (предо), before. |
| За, behind; after; for. | При, near; in the time of. |
| Изъ (изо), from. | Про, of, about. |
| Изъ-за, from behind. | Ради, for the sake of. |
| Изъ-подъ, from under. | Раз- or раз- (разо), apart, <i>se-</i> . |
| Къ (ко), to, towards; for. | Сквозъ, through. |
| На, on; against. | Съ (со, су-), since; about; with. |
| Надъ (надо), upon, over. | У, at; by, near. [ing.] |
| Низ- (низо-), down, <i>de-</i> . | Черезъ or чѣрезъ, through; dur- |
| О or объ (обо), of; round; against. | |

The following adverbs also belong to the class of prepositions:

| | |
|--------------------------------|---------------------------------|
| Близъ, near. | Около, round; about. |
| Вдоль, along. | Окрестъ, around. |
| Вмѣсто, instead of. | Опрічь, except, excepting. |
| Внутрь and внутрі, within. | Повѣрхъ, upon, above. |
| Внѣ, out of, without. | Побѣ, beside. |
| Возлѣ, beside. | Позади and поза́дь, behind. |
| Вопреки, against, in spite of. | Послѣ, after. |
| Кромѣ, besides, except. | Прѣжде, before. |
| Между or межъ, between, among. | Противъ or противу, against. |
| Мимо, past, by. | Сверхъ, above; besides. |
| Назади, behind. | Сзади or сзади́, from behind. |
| Насупротивъ, opposite. | Среди and средь, in the middle. |

Certain adverbs, formed from qualifying adjectives, are also used as prepositions; e. g. *относительно*, *in reference to*; *касательно*, *concerning*. The same is the case with certain gerunds, as: *исключая*, *excepting*; *не смотря на*, *not withstanding*, and also some nouns in different cases, as: *въ разсужденіи*, *in consideration of*; *посредствомъ*, *by means of*, &c.

76—The prepositions in every language have a twofold use. In the first place they are used, as prefixes, in the formation of the different parts of speech, of which they become an integral part; e. g. *безуміе*, *absurdity*; *взглядъ*, *look*, *западъ*, *the west*; *обольщать*, *to seduce*; *насынокъ*, *the son-in-law*; *правнукъ*, *the great-grand-son*; *сумерки*, *twilight*; *чрезвычайный*, *extraordinary*, &c. Secondly, as particles of speech, they are placed before nouns and pronouns to indicate the relations of the objects; e. g. *человѣкъ безъ ума*, *a man without talent*; *про́сьба до судьи*, *a request to the judge*; *письмо къ другу*, *a letter to a friend*; *сказка о лисицѣ*, *the tale of the fox*, &c.

These examples show that some prepositions are used conjointly and separately, while others of them can only be employed in one of these ways. Such as are only used *separately*, are: *для*, *къ* (*ко*), *ради*, *сквозь*, *изъ-за* and *изъ-подъ*. Such as are only used *conjointly*, are: *въ* (*воз*, *взо*), *вы*, *низъ* (*низо*), *на*, *пра*, *пре* (*пере*), *разъ* (*роз*, *разо*) and *съ*, and for this reason are called *inseparable* prepositions. All the other prepositions may be used both conjointly and separately.

77.—The separable prepositions require the complementary word to be put in a certain case. Thus: Government
of the pre-
positions.

Безъ, для, до, изъ, изъ-за, изъ-подъ, отъ, ради and у, as well as almost all the adverbs used prepositionally, require the *genitive*.

Къ and the adverb вопреки require the *dative*.

Про, сквозь and чрезъ govern the *accusative*.

Надъ requires the *instrumental*, as does also the adverb между or межъ, though used occasionally with the *genitive*.

При governs the *prepositional*.

За, подъ and предъ require the *accusative*, when they indicate motion towards an object, and the *instrumental* when they design repose.

Въ, на and о or объ govern the *accusative*, when they indicate a change of place, and the *prepositional*, when there is no motion indicated from one place to another.

Съ governs the *genitive*, the *accusative* and the *instrumental*. With the *genitive* it means *from*, *since*; with the *accusative*, *as*, *about*, *of the size of*, and with the *instrumental*, *with*.

По requires the *dative*, the *accusative* and the *prepositional*. With the *dative* it signifies *about*; with the *accusative*, *as far as*, and with the *prepositional*, *after*.

EXERCISES ON THE PREPOSITIONS.

Without hope it is impossible to live in the world. From
Безъ надежда нельзя жить въ светъ. Отъ
the river to the forest there are two versts. Of what are you
рѣка до лѣсъ (есть) два верста. О что ты

talking? We labour for the public good. Between the
говорить? Я трудиться для общій благо. Между

house and the garden there is a large court with stables.
домъ и садъ (есть) пространный дворъ съ конюшня.

For God's sake do not grieve. The love of the sovereign
Ради Бога не унывать. Любѣвь къ государь

and of one's native land. He lives at his uncle. The soldier
и отѣчество. Онъ жить у свой дѣда. Солдатъ

started from behind the bush. The ray of the sun passes
выскочить изъ-за кустъ. Лучъ солнечный проникать
through the water. This man is at death's door.
сквозь вода. Этотъ человекъ (есть) при смерть.

The bird flies under the clouds. I have put the book under
Птица летать подъ облако. Я положить книга подъ

the table. Sit down to table and remain at table. My
столъ. Садиться за столъ и сидѣть за столъ. Мой

brother starts for Moscow, because his wife lives at
братъ ѣхать въ Москвѣ, потому что онъ женѣ жить въ

Moscow. The eagle is perched on the tree. This glass
Москвѣ. Орѣль сидѣть на дерево. Этотъ рюмка

has been broken into several pieces. I am angry with my
разбиваться на мелкій часть. Я досадовать на мой

brother for his laziness. Never mind the affairs of others.
братъ за онъ лѣность. Не заботиться о дѣло чужой.

My friend has wounded himself against the corner of the table.
Мой другъ ушибаться объ уголъ столъ.

The water runs from the roof. Here are trees with leaves,
Вода течь съ кровля. Вотъ дерево съ листь,

but without blossoms. This dog will be of the size of
но безъ цвѣтъ. Этотъ собака быть съ

a cow. The children run about the court and about the
корова. Дитя бѣгать по дворъ и по

garden. We worked from the first to the fifth of August.
садъ. Я рабѣть отъ пѣрвый по пѣтый числѣ А'вгустъ.

He wears mourning for his brother.
Онъ носить трауръ по свой братъ.

THE CONJUNCTION.

78.—The following is a general list of the Russian *conjunctions* (союзы).

| | |
|---|--------------------------------------|
| А, and; but. | Не только . . . но, и, not only |
| Буде, if, provided. | but even. |
| Будто, будто бы, that, as if. | Нежели, than. |
| Впрочемъ, as for the rest. | Ни, ниже, neither, nor; not |
| Да, and, but; let. | Но, but. [even. |
| Дабы, that, in order that. | Однако, however. |
| Для того что, because. | Посему, then. |
| Если и если, if, in case, when. | Потому что, because. |
| Же or жъ, then, also. | Правда, it is true. |
| И, and; also, too. | Пускай or пусть, let. |
| Ибо, because. | Сколь ни, whatever. |
| Или or иль, or. | Слѣдовательно, consequently, |
| И такъ, therefore. | То, then. [then. |
| Какъ, as, when. | Того ради, therefore. |
| Какъ-то, for instance. | Только and то́кмо, only, merely. |
| Когда, when, whenever. | Хотя, though, although. |
| Ли or ль (<i>interrogative</i>); if, whether. | Хотя бы, even though. |
| Либо, either, or. | Что, that. |
| Лишь, just, as soon as. | Чтобы or чтобъ, that, in order that. |
| | Чѣмъ, than. |

There are other parts of speech which perform the office of conjunctions; such are the relative pronouns: кто, что, который, кой, *who, which*; чей, *whose*; какой, *which*; the interrogative adverbs: гдѣ, куда, *where*; отку́да, *whence*; доко́ль, *how long*; ско́лько, сколь, *how much*; and others: такъ,

thus; пока́, as much as; тѣмъ . . . чѣмъ, so much the more . . . that; чѣмъ . . . тѣмъ, the more . . . the more; частью, in part, &c.

EXERCISES ON THE CONJUNCTIONS.

My uncle was born and lived at Moscow, and not at Tver.

Мой дѣдя родиться и жить въ Москвѣ, а не въ Тверь.

Do you know that our tutor is indisposed? If you do
Знать ли что нашъ учитель нездоровый? Ежели ты

not come I shall be angry. Ask him if he
не прѣзжать, то я осердиться. Спросить у онъ, ли онъ

will come, or if he has the intention to stop at home. Не
хотѣть ѣхать, или вознамѣрится оставаться дома. Онъ

distresses himself more about his brother than about his sister.

забѣдниться болѣе о братъ, нежели о сестра.

It is more agreeable to do good to others, than to receive

Пріятно дѣлать добръ другой, чѣмъ получать

benefits one's self. Let him come; let them go.

благотвореніе самъ. Пусть онъ прійти; пускай онъ уѣхать.

Do not let the sun find you on your bed. Long live

Не да солнце заставать ты на ложе. Да здравствовать

the Tzar. The more thou learnest diligently, the more study will

Царь. Чѣмъ ты учишься прилежно, тѣмъ ученіе быть

be easy to thee.

лѣгкій для ты.

THE INTERJECTION.

79.—The principal *interjections* (междомѣтія) of the Russian language are the following: ура! ра! expressing *joy*; ахъ! охъ! увы! ахти! expressive of *pain*; ай! ухъ! ой! indicate *fear*; тоу! indicates *aversion*; уфъ! expresses *fatigue*; ну! нѣже! are used to *encourage*; стъ! тсъ! to impose *silence*; эй! рей! to *call*.

SECOND PART

SYNTAX.

80.—*Syntax*, which treats of the union of the different elements of speech, and of the order in which those different elements ought to be arranged, is divided into three parts: 1) the *concord* of words (согласованіе), or the syntax of agreement, which teaches how to express the union existing between the words forming the proposition; 2) the *dependence* of words (управлѣніе), or the syntax of government, which teaches the manner of indicating the relation existing between a term and its antecedent; and 3) the *construction* of words (размѣщеніе), or the place to be assigned to the single words in the proposition, and to the propositions in the period.

Division of
Syntax.

CONCORD OF WORDS.

81.—The following are the rules of the concord of words in the Russian language:

1. The *subject* (подлежащее), *attribute* (сказуемое) and *copula* (связка) must agree in gender, number and person; e. g. Ботъ есть всемогущъ, *God is almighty*; науки (суть) полезны, *the sciences are useful*; Москва была славна, *Moscow has been celebrated*; Азія будетъ спокойна, *Asia will be tranquil*; солнце возшло, *the sun has risen*. — When the attribute is a noun, it retains its gender and number; as: орёлъ есть хищная птица, *the eagle*

is a bird of prey; but the movable nouns agree with the subject; as: *луна́ есть спутница земли, the moon is the satellite of the earth.*

To this rule there are the following exceptions: 1) The personal pronoun of the 2d person, with its determinatives, as also the verb and the attribute when an adjective is used, from politeness, in the *plural* instead of the singular; but when the attribute is a noun, it remains in the singular; e. g. *вы сами, другъ мой, нездоровы, you yourself, my friend, are indisposed; будьте свидѣтелями, be a witness.* — 2) The verb *быть*, in the sense of *exist*, though the subject be plural, remains in the *singular* in the 3d person of the present; but in the preterit and future it agrees in number with its subject; e. g. *у него́ есть деньги, he has money; у него́ были деньги, he had money; у него́ будутъ деньги, he will have money.* — 2) In the case of nouns indicating a title, the verb and the attribute agree in gender with the sex of the person who bears the title; as: *Его́ Величество (Король) нездоровъ, His Majesty (the King) is indisposed; Ея́ Сіятельство (Графиня) была́ здѣсь, Her Excellency (the Countess) has been here; Его́ Свѣтлость (Князь) прогуливался, His Highness (the Prince) has taken a walk.*

2. Determinative words agree with the noun they determine, in *gender, number and case*; e. g. *Великійъ Петръ преобразовалъ обширную Россію, Peter the Great has regenerated the vast Russian empire.* If the determinative is a noun, it only agrees in *case*; e. g. *слёзы, утѣшеніе несчастныхъ, у него́ иссякли, tears, the consolation of the unhappy, were dried up within him.*

3. Two or more subjects in the singular require the verb and the attribute in the *plural*; e. g. *лѣньность и прѣздность (суть) вредны, laziness and inactivity are pernicious.* If the two nouns in the singular are united by an alternative conjunction,

the verb and the attribute must be in the *singular*; e. g. зима́ или весна́ тебѣ́ прі́ятна? *is it winter or spring that is agreeable to thee?*

4. The infinitive, when it performs the office of subject, requires the verb and the attribute to be put in the *neuter singular*; this is also the case with the adverbs много́, *much*; ма́ло, *little*; ско́лько, *how much*; нѣско́лько, *some*; e. g. уми́рать за оте́чество (есть) сла́вно и прі́ятно, *it is noble and pleasant to die for one's country*; ско́лько пришло́ семе́йствъ, *how many families have arrived?*

5. When two nouns, the one appellative and the other proper, both relating to the same object, differ in number or gender, the adjective or verb agrees with the *appellative* noun; e. g. дре́вній го́родъ Ѡ́ивы, *the ancient city of Thebes*; сла́вная рѣ́ка Дуна́й, *the celebrated river Danube*. When there are two nouns of different genders, the adjective agrees with the *masculine*; e. g. сла́вные ца́ри и ца́рицы, *the celebrated kings and queens*. In the verbs the first person has the priority over the two others, and the second over the third; as: ты и я гу́ляемъ вмѣстѣ́, *thou and I walk together*; ты и онъ не зна́ете что дѣ́лать, *thou and he know not what to do*.

6. The numerals compounded of о́динъ, *one*, require the noun in the *singular* (§ 43); e. g. двѣ́дцать о́динъ ру́бль, *twenty one rubles*; ты́сяча о́дна но́чь, *the thousand and one nights*.

7. The relative pronouns agree in *gender* and *number* with the noun to which they relate, but they take the *case* that the verb of the phrase in which

they occur, may require; e. g. я знаю дѣло, о которомъ вы говорите, *I know the affair of which you speak*. The pronoun *чей*, occurring always with a noun, must agree in every respect with that noun; e. g. тотъ, въ чьихъ рукахъ моя судьба, *he in whose hands is my destiny*.

EXERCISES ON THE CONCORD OF WORDS.

Winter is agreeable. Men are mortal. Novgorod was
Зима приятный. Человѣкъ смертный. Новгородъ быть
rich. Russia is a vast empire. The Wolga is the king
богатый. Россія быть обширный имперія. Волга быть царь
of the rivers of Russia. My friend, you shall be satisfied.
рѣка русскій. Мой пріятель, ты быть довольный.

We have great stores. I shall have to-morrow some
У я быть большой запасъ. У я быть завтра
money. Her Majesty (*the Empress*) is gone out. His
деньги. Онъ Величество (*Императрица*) выѣхать. Онъ

Excellency (*the general*) is gone. His Imperial
Превосходительство (*генералъ*) уѣхать. Онъ Императорскій
Highness (*the Grand-Duke*) has been satisfied. Geography
Высочество (*Великій Князь*) быть довольный. Географія

and history are very useful branches of knowledge.
и исторія быть весьма полезный знаніе.

It is difficult to be silent. How many children were there?
Трудный молчать. Сколько дѣтя быть тамъ?

Moscow is celebrated; the town of Moscow is celebrated.
Москва знаменитый; городъ

China is densely peopled; the empire of China is densely
Китай многолюдный; государство

peopled. He has thirty one horses. The book
 У ОНЪ БЫТЬ ТРИДЦАТЬ ОДИНЪ ЛОШАДЬ. Книга,
 which you are reading, is very amusing. Here is
 который ты читаешь, очень забавный. Вотъ
 the man by whose works we profit.
 человекъ, (instr.) чей трудъ пользоваться.

DEPENDENCE OF WORDS.

82.—For the *dependence* or government of words in Russian the following rules are to be observed:

1. Words which, having the same root, appear in the form of substantive, adjective or adverb, as also in the form of verb, participle or gerund, require the same *cases*; e. g. вредить ближнему, *to do harm to his neighbour*; вредящий ближнему, *doing harm to his neighbour*; вредя ближнему, *in doing harm to his neighbour*; вредъ ближнему, *the harm done to his neighbour*; вредный ближнему, *prejudicial to his neighbour*; вредно ближнему, *prejudicially to his neighbour*.

2. The governing power of the verbs depends on their meaning: the same verb used in different significations requires different *cases*; e. g. говорить правду, *to speak the truth*; говорить о дѣлѣ, *to speak of an affair*; говорить языкомъ, *to speak a language*; говорить съ другомъ, *to speak with a friend*; отказать просителю, *to refuse a petitioner*; отказать въ просьбѣ, *to refuse a request*; отказать домъ, *to bequeath a house*; отказать отъ должности, *to deprive of an office*.

3. The prepositions communicate to the verbs to which they are joined a double quality. In the first place they express simply the commencement of the action, its duration and its completion; as: игралъ на флѣйтѣ, *he played on the flute*; заигралъ на флѣйтѣ, *he began to play on the flute*; поигравъ на флѣйтѣ, занялся онъ чтеніемъ, *after having played a little on the flute, he busied himself with reading*; вчера сыгралъ на флѣйтѣ претрудное сочиненіе, *yesterday he played on the flute a very difficult composition*; онъ доигралъ на флѣйтѣ начатое на скрипкѣ,

he finished playing on the flute what he had begun on the violin; отыгралъ на флѣйтѣ въ полночь, he ceased playing on the flute at midnight.

Secondly the preposition gives to the verb another meaning; e. g. писать писемѡ, *to write a letter*; восписатьъ хвалѣ, *to confer praises upon*; вписатьъ въ книгу, *to inscribe in the book*; выписатьъ изъ книги, *to extract from a book*; записатьъ въ службу, *to enter on the service*; надписатьъ адресъ, *to write an address*; отписатьъ къ другу, *to inform a friend*; переписатьъ набѣлю, *to make a fair copy*; приписатьъ строчку, *to add a line*; прописатьъ всю службу, *to describe the whole service*; расписатьъ комнату, *to paint a room*; списаться съ пріятелемъ, *to correspond with a friend*. The prepositional verbs of the first mentioned class require after them the same *preposition* and the same *case* as in the simple form, while those of the second category, in which the addition of a preposition modifies the sense, take after them the preposition with which they are formed, or a corresponding one, as is seen below.

| | | | |
|---|--------------------|---------------|---|
| Verbs formed with the preposition require after them the preposition | возоръ, въ, . . . | на; e. g. . . | взойти на гору, <i>to ascend the mountain.</i> |
| | в ор во, въ; . . . | въ; . . . | вступать въ домъ, <i>to enter in the house.</i> |
| | вы, . . . | изъ; . . . | выйти изъ лѣсу, <i>to issue from the forest.</i> |
| | до, . . . | до; . . . | добѣхать до города, <i>to go as far as the town.</i> |
| | за, . . . | за; . . . | закінуть за спину, <i>to throw behind one's self.</i> |
| | из, . . . | изъ; . . . | извлечь изъ книги, <i>to extract from a book.</i> |
| | на, . . . | на; . . . | навѣшчтъ на лошадь, <i>to place upon a horse.</i> |
| | над, . . . | надъ; . . . | надсматривать надъ дѣтьми, <i>to watch over the children.</i> |
| | низ, . . . | съ; . . . | низлетѣть съ кровли, <i>to fly down from the roof.</i> |
| | от, . . . | отъ; . . . | оторвать отъ работы, <i>to tear from labour.</i> |
| | пере, . . . | чрезъ; . . . | перескочить чрезъ ровъ, <i>to leap across a ditch.</i> |
| | под, . . . | подъ; . . . | подложить подъ голову, <i>to put under his head.</i> |
| | пред, . . . | предъ; . . . | предстать предъ судей, <i>to present himself before the judges.</i> |
| | при, . . . | къ; . . . | прійти къ другу, <i>to come to a friend.</i> |
| | про, . . . | сквозъ; . . . | пройти сквозъ огонь, <i>to pass through the fire.</i> |
| | пронз, . . . | отъ; . . . | произойти отъ болѣзни, <i>to arise from a disease.</i> |
| | раз, . . . | на; . . . | разрѣзать на части, <i>to cut into pieces.</i> |
| | с ор со, съ; . . . | съ; . . . | скінуть съ себя, <i>to throw of one's self.</i> |

83.—We now give the application of these rules in every case, with the exceptions thereto.

Nominative. In the *nominative* are put: 1) The subject, or the principal member of the proposition; as: *солнце свѣтитъ, the sun shines; море шумитъ, the sea*

roars. (The subject with a negative verb is sometimes put in the *genitive*; see below.)—2) The attribute, united to the subject by means of the verb *есть*, *былъ* or *буду*, when it expresses a permanent quality of the subject; as: орёлъ есть птица, *the eagle is a bird*; Адамъ былъ человекомъ, *Adam was a man*. The adjective in this occasion is used in the apocopated termination; as: Богъ есть всемогущъ, *God is almighty*; Славяне были храбры, *the Slavonians were brave*. If the attribute does not express some permanent quality of the subject, but only a transitory one and of short duration, it is then put in the *instrumental*; as: мой братъ былъ въ то время кадетомъ, *my brother was at that time a cadet*; онъ скоро будетъ генераломъ, *he will soon be a general*. This exception however occurs only with the preterit and the future, never with the present.

In the *vocative* is put the name or denomination Vocative. of the person addressed; e. g. Бóже, спаси Царя! *God, save the Tsar!* Господи, помилуй меня! *Lord, have mercy upon me!*

The *accusative* is used: 1) After the active verbs; Accusative. as: птица пьётъ воду, *the bird drinks the water*; я погасилъ свѣчѹ, *I have put out the candle*; мой сосѣдъ купилъ домъ, *my neighbour has bought a house*. The verbal nouns, formed from these verbs, require the *genitive*; as: питье воды, *the drinking of the water*; погашеніе свѣчѹ, *the putting out of the candle*; покупка дома, *the purchase of a house*. —2) To indicate the duration of an action for a given time or over a given distance; as: я шёлъ

всю ночь, *I have written the whole night*; онъ проѣхалъ версту, *he has run a verst*.—3) After the prepositions въ, на, за, подъ, предъ, про, сквозь, чрезъ, о or объ, no and съ (§ 77).

Dative. The *dative* is used: 1) With the accusative, to indicate the person to whose gain or loss the action is performed; e. g. ты подалъ милостыню бѣдному, *thou hast given alms to the poor man*.—2) After the verbs formed with the prepositions предъ and со (in a sense of reciprocity), or with the adverbs благо, противъ and прѣко; as: осень предшествуетъ зимѣ, *autumn precedes winter*; не прекословь старшимъ, *do not contradict the aged*.—3) After the verbs expressing command or prohibition, pleasure or grief, compliance or opposition, assistance or obstacle; e. g. мы подражаемъ древнимъ, *we imitate the ancients*; не льсти богатымъ, *do not flatter the rich*; служи усердно Государю, *serve the sovereign with zeal*. The verbal nouns formed from these verbs also require the dative; as: подражаніе древнимъ, *the imitation of the ancients*; лесть богатымъ, *flattery to the rich*.—4) After such verbs as are used in the infinitive instead of the future; as: быть бѣдѣ, *there will be a misfortune*; не видать намъ ясныхъ дней, *we shall see no more fine days*.—5) With the impersonal verbs; as: мнѣ хочется ѣсть, *I want to eat*; вамъ нездоровится, *you are indisposed*.—6) With such adjectives and adverbs as are derived from the above mentioned verbs, or which express advantage or detriment, utility or uselessness, pleasure or dislike; e. g. пріятный слуху, *agreeable to the ear*; жить при-

лично своему состоянию, *to live suitably to one's condition.*—7) After the prepositions *кз* and *по*, and the adverb *вопреки* (§ 77).

The *instrumental* is used: 1) With the active, neuter, pronominal and passive verbs, *a*) to designate the instrument, the means by which the action is performed; as: онъ берётъ книгу руками, *he takes the book with the hands*; я моюсь водою, *I wash myself with water*; книга написана моимъ учителемъ, *the book has been written by my master*; б) to designate the name, surname or quality given to an object; as: его зовутъ Иоанномъ, *they call him John*; тебя почитаютъ умнымъ, *you are considered intelligent*. Some active verbs expressing motion, which usually govern the accusative, are also found with the instrumental; as: бросать камень and бросать камнемъ, *to throw a stone*; двигать сердца and сердцами, *to move the hearts.*—2) With the verb *быть* and *быва́ть*, to designate a quality; as: онъ хочетъ быть любимымъ, *he desires to be loved*; не быва́ть тебѣ воиномъ, *thou wilt not be a warrior*. (See above the nominative.)—3) After such verbs as indicate contempt, indignation, esteem, possession, sacrifice, &c.; as: пренебрега́ть опасностью, *to despise danger*; владе́ть имѣниемъ, *to possess a property*; жертвовать собою, *to sacrifice one's self*. The verbal nouns formed from such verbs also require the instrumental; as: пренебреже́ние опасностью, *the contempt of danger*; владе́ние имѣниемъ, *the possession of a property.*—4) To designate that part of an object which is distinguished by some particular quality; as: лице́мъ

бѣлъ, *white in the face*; широкъ плечами, *broad in the shoulders*.—5) To indicate the road an object takes; and also to designate the seasons and the parts of the day; as: плыть моремъ, *to go by sea*; весною сѣютъ, *one sows in spring*; ночью спятъ, *one sleeps at night*.—6) After the prepositions за, надъ, подъ, предъ, съ, and the adverb между or межъ (§ 77).

Genitive. The *genitive* is used: 1) With nouns to indicate that one object is the property of another, and also its origin, &c.; as: хозяинъ дома, *the master of the house*; домъ сосѣда, *the house of the neighbour*; сынъ солдата, *the son of a soldier*. The complementary noun in such occasions may be converted into a possessive adjective; as: домовый хозяинъ, сосѣдний домъ, солдатскій сынъ. The dative may sometimes be substituted for this genitive; as: другъ брата, *the friend of the brother*; цѣна мѣстамъ, *the price of the places*. A noun with a qualifying adjective indicates in the genitive the quality of the object in a higher degree; as: чайъ лучшаго сорта, *a tea of superior quality*; человекъ строгихъ правилъ, *a man of rigid principles*.—2) With the verbal nouns, formed from active verbs governing the accusative; e. g. чтѣние книги, *the reading of a book*; знаніе дѣла, *the knowledge of an affair*.—3) To designate number, weight, measure, and in general after adverbs of quantity; as: пудъ сѣна, *a food of hay*; аршинъ сукна, *an ell of cloth*; нѣсколько книгъ, *some books*.—4) To designate the years, the months and the day of the month; as: шестаго января тысяча восемьсотъ

четырнадцатого года, *January 6th 1814.*—5) After active verbs preceded by the negative adverb *не*, and with the impersonal negative verbs *нѣтъ, не стало, не слышно, не имѣется*, and others indicating privation; e. g. *не люблю невѣжды, I do not like the ignorant; не вижу пользы, I do not see the advantage; у насъ нѣтъ хлеба, we have no bread; когда меня не будетъ, when I shall be no more; не видно переменъ, one sees no change.*—

6) With the active verbs, when the action extends only to a part of the object, or lasts only a limited time; e. g. *принеси воды, bring me some water; дай мнѣ перо, give me your pen for a little while.*

The same is the case with some verbs formed with the prepositions *на* and *по*, as: *наудить рыбы, to catch some fish; покосить травы, to mow some grass.*—7) With such active and pronominal verbs as express desire, expectation, disobedience, fear, privation, &c.; e. g. *желаемъ здѣнія, we desire health; онъ ждетъ разсвѣта, he awaits daybreak; бояться дневнаго свѣта, to fear the light of day; держаться правилъ чести, to keep to principles of honour.*

The verbal nouns formed from these verbs also require the genitive; as: *желаніе славы, the desire of glory; лишеніе имѣнія, the loss of a property.*—8) After the adjectives *достойный, worthy; полный, full; чуждый, a stranger to;* and the adverb *жаль, it is a pity;*

e. g. *я чуждъ сего мнѣнія, I am a stranger to this opinion; жаль ему брата, he is sorry for his brother.*—9) After adjectives and adverbs in the comparative, when not followed by a conjunction; e. g. *сокровища драгоценнѣйшія*

зѳлота, *treasures more precious than gold*; слонѳ выше верблюда, *the elephant is larger than the camel*; онѳ жилѳ долѳе всѳхѳ, *he has lived longer than all*.—10) After the prepositions безѳ, для, до, изѳ, изѳ-здѳ, изѳ-подѳ, отѳ, рѳди, сѳ and у, as also after most of the adverbs used as prepositions (§ 77), remarking that the prepositions для and рѳди are sometimes placed after their complement; as: для Бѳга and Бѳга для, *for God's sake*; рѳди чѳсти and чѳсти рѳди, *for honour*.

Lastly the *genitive* is used with the numerals. See the particular rules relative to the numerals § 43.

Preposi-
tional.

The *prepositional* case is only used with the prepositions вѳ, на, о or обѳ, no and при (§ 77).

EXERCISES ON THE DEPENDENCE OF WORDS.

Nominative. Water is an element. Alexander of Macedon was a great
Водѳ быть стихія. Александрѳ Македонскій быть великій

captain. The Tatars were ferocious. My grand-father
полковѳдецъ. Татаринѳ быть свирѳпый. Мой дѳдѳ

was an officer; my grand-father was then an officer. It is said
быть офицерѳ; тогда . Говорятѳ

that the comets have been or will be once planets.
что комѳта быть или быть ещѳ планѳта.

Accusative. The rain refreshes the earth. Rogues hate honest
Дождѳ освежать землѳ. Злодѳи ненавидѳть чѳстный

men. The storm which devastated our fields, has ruined
люди. Бѳря, опустѳшатѳ нашѳ полѳ, разорятѳ

many peasants. Speak always the truth. My brother has
многіѳ поселянинѳ. Говоритѳ всегдѳ правдѳ. Мой братѳ быть

been sick all winter. I have been a whole verst on horseback.
 больной весь зима. Я ѣхать цѣлый верста верхомъ.

Thou art praised for thy assiduity. He struck himself against
 Ты хвалить за прилежаніе. Онъ удариться объ
 the wall. We are in the water up to the neck. The son
 стѣна. Я сидѣть въ вода по шея. Сынъ

is the size of the father, and the daughter almost the size of
 ростъ съ отецъ, и дочь почти съ
 the mother.

мать.

The miser prefers money to glory, and the warrior Dative.

Скупѣцъ предпочитать деньги слава, и воинъ

prefers glory to money. The lightning precedes the
 слава деньги. Молнія предшествовать

thunder. I admire your patience. Do these pictures
 громъ. Дивиться вашъ терпѣніе. Этотъ картина

please you? Do not avenge thyself on thy enemy,
 нравиться ли ты? Не мстить твой непріятель,

and do good to him who has offended thee. There will
 и дѣлать добро обижать ты. Быть

be a prodigy. Bitter tears will be shed. The child wishes
 чудо. Горькій слеза литься. Ребенокъ хотѣться

to drink. It is not proper for a strong man to offend
 пить. Не приличнѣе сильный человекъ обижать

the weak. The imitation of Jesus Christ. The love of
 слабый. Подражаніе Иисусъ Христосъ. Любовь къ

virtue and the hatred of vice.

добродѣтель и ненависть къ пороку.

I see with the eyes, I touch with the hands, I hear with Instru-

Видѣть глаза, осязать рука, слышать mental.

the ears, I smell with the nose, I taste with the tongue.

ухо, обонять носъ, вкушать языкъ.

Ismail was taken by Souvorof, and Otchakow by Potemkin.
Измайль взятъ Суворовъ, и Очаковъ Потёмкинъ.

Every body calls these officers heroes. The patient moves
Весь называть этотъ офицеръ герой. Большой шевелить
scarcely the lips. I detest fraud and falsehood. Here
едва губа. Гнушаться обманъ и ложь. Здѣсь

one breathes a pure air. The sacrifice of one's life for
дышать чистый воздухъ. Пожертвованіе жизнь за
his sovereign and country. He is kind in heart, but weak

Государь и отечество. Онъ добрый сердце, но слабый
in head. One must rise in the morning, work during
головѣ. Надобно вставать утро, работать

the day, rest in the evening and sleep during the night.
день, отдыхать вечеръ, и спать ночь.

Reconcile my friend with his uncle. I congratulate you on
Помирить мой другъ съ онъ дядя. Поздравлять ты съ
your success.
вашъ успѣхъ.

Genitive. The son of my faithful friend departed yesterday. Quick-
Сынъ мой искренній другъ уѣзжать вчера. Большой

witted children are often delicate. There has been made
умъ дитя бывать нерѣдко хилый. Составлять

a list of the officers of our division. The baking of bread.
списокъ офицеръ нашъ дивизія. Печеніе хлѣбъ.

I have bought a pound of tea and a cord of wood. Such
Я купить фунтъ чай и сажень дровѣ. Столько
labour and pains have been lost uselessly. The Russians
трудъ и забота пропадать по-пустому. Русскій

took Paris March 18th 1814. I do not eat bread, but
брать Парижъ мартъ 18 1814. Я не ѣсть хлѣбъ, но
I drink water. I eat the bread, but I do not drink the water.
пить вода. Я ѣсть хлѣбъ, но не пить вода.

I have received neither letter nor packet. In this letter there
 Я получа́ть не ни пи́сьмо, ни посылка. Въ э́тот пи́сьмо нѣтъ
 is not a fault. Procure me money. The warriors wish
 ни оди́нъ оши́бка. Достава́ть я де́ньги. Вои́ны жела́ть
 for the battle and seek glory. The ambitious man thirsts for
 бо́йства и иска́ть сла́ва. Славолюбе́ць жа́ждать
 honours. Thou desirest riches, and thou fearest labour.
 по́честъ. Ты хоте́ть бога́тство, и бо́иться тру́да.
 The barrel is full of wine. A worthy man is a stranger to hatred
 Ба́рка полны́й ви́но. До́брый че́ловѣкъ чу́ждый зло́ба
 and envy. Gold is dearer than silver; lead is heavier
 и зави́сть. Зо́лото доро́гой серебро́; сви́нецъ тяжѣ́льш
 than iron. He asks alms for Christ's sake. Rest is
 желе́зо. Онъ проси́тъ ми́лостыня Христо́съ ра́ди. О́тдыхъ
 agreeable after labour. Along this shore runs a chain
 прі́ятный послѣ́ раба́та. Вдо́ль э́тот бе́рег тяну́тся цѣ́пь
 of mountains. The wolves prowl round the villages.
 го́ра. Волкѣ́ броди́тъ око́ло дере́вня.

My brother preserves his presence of mind in all the ^{Prepositional.}
 Мой бра́тъ храни́ть прису́тствіе ду́хъ при́ весь
 troubles of life. This town is built on the precipitous
 неприя́тность въ жи́знь. Сей го́родъ постро́ить на круто́й
 bank of a rapid river. A church with five cupolas. He
 бе́рег бы́стрый ре́ка. Це́рковь о́ пять гла́ва. Онъ
 weeps over his father.
 пла́кать по́ свой о́тець.

THE FAIRY. ВОЛШЕБНИЦА.

The different rules of
Syntax.

A widow had two daughters: the elder resembled
 Оди́нъ вдова́ имѣ́тъ два́ дочь: ста́рый бы́ть похо́жій на
 her mother both in face and temper, that is to say, she was
 свой ма́ть и ли́це и нра́въ, то́ есть, онъ бы́ть

as ugly and as malicious as her mother. Nobody такъ же дурной и такъ же злой, какъ онъ мать. Никто loved them; every one avoided them. The younger was не любить онъ; весь бѣгать отъ онъ. Мѣлый же быть beautiful and good. Every one loved her. But her прекрасный и добродушный. Весь любить онъ. Но онъ malicious mother and her wicked sister detested her; злой мать и злой сестра ненавидѣть онъ; they scolded her without ceasing; she alone was obliged бранить безпрестанно; онъ одинъ быть должный to work in the house, to heat the stove, to sweep the rooms, рабѣтывать въ домъ, топить печь, мести горница, to cook. The poor child wept from morning till стрѣпать въ кѹхня. Бѣдняжка плакать съ утро до night, but she was not lazy at her work; she was вѣчеръ, но онъ не лѣниться рабѣтывать; быть obedient, patient, and all that was in vain, for послушный, терпѣливый, и весь этотъ быть напрасный, ибо she could in no way satisfy her wicked mother and мѣтъ не ничтѣ угождать на свой злой мать и на her wicked sister. свой злой сестра.

Every day this poor girl was forced to go with Ежедневно этотъ бѣдный дѣвушка быть должный ходитъ съ a large pitcher to fetch water in a neighbouring wood, большой кувшинъ за вода въ близкій рѣща, where there was a clear spring. One day she въ который находится чистый источникъ. Однажды онъ had gone according to custom to this spring. The day пойти по обыкновеніе къ этотъ источникъ. День was very hot. After having filled her pitcher with water, быть очень жаркій. Наполнять кувшинъ вода,

she returned home. All at once she saw before her
онъ возвращаться домой. Вдруг видѣть предъ себя
an old woman. "My child!" said to her the old woman,
старушка. «Мой дитя!» скáзывать онъ старушка,
"give me water to drink; I am wearied; I am very hot." —
«дава́ть я напива́ться; я устава́ть; я (*быть*) жа́ркій.» —
"With pleasure, good mother", said the young girl, "here
«Съ охота, ба́бушка», скáзывать дѣвушка, «вотъ!
drink." And she presented the pitcher to the poor woman.
напива́ться.» И онъ подава́ть кувши́нь стару́шка.

The old woman sat down on the grass from weariness, and
Стару́шка сади́ться на трава́ отъ сла́бость, а
the young girl kneeled down before her, and
молодо́й краса́вица стано́вится на ко́лено пере́дъ онъ, и
held gently the pitcher, while she drank.
подде́рживать осто́рожно кувши́нь, пока́ онъ пить вода́.
"I thank thee, my dear!" said the old woman after
«Благода́рить ты, ми́лый!» скáзывать стару́шка,
having drunk. "I see that thou art a good, an amiable
напива́ться. «Ви́дѣть, что ты (*есть*) до́брый, ла́сковый
child, and I wish to reward thee for thy kindness.
дитя́, и хоте́ть награжда́ть ты за тво́й услу́жливость.
Know then that I am a fairy, and that I took pur-
Зна́ть же, я волшебница, и взять на себя на-
posely the form of an old woman to put thee to the proof.
ро́чно ви́дѣ стару́шка, чтобы́ ты испыты́вать.
I am delighted that thou art so good, and this is what
Ра́доваться, что ты (*есть*) тако́й до́брый, и вотъ, что
I will do for thee: every time that thou shalt pronounce
хоте́ть сде́лать для́ ты: вся́кій разъ, что ты скáзывать
a word, there shall issue from thy mouth either a pretty
сло́во, выпада́ть изъ у́ ты ротъ или́ прекра́сный

flower, or a precious stone, or a large pearl.
 цвѣтокъ, или драгоценный камень, или большой жемчужина.

Farewell, my little friend." And the fairy disappeared.
 Прости, дружокъ.» И волшебница исчезать.

The pretty girl returned home. "Where hast
 Прекрасный дѣвушка возвращаться домой. «Гдѣ

thou been so long", asked her mother with ill
 ты быть такъ долго», спрашивать у онъ мать съ

humour? — "What hast thou been doing so long in the wood?"
 сердце? — «Что ты дѣлать такъ долго въ роща?»

cried her wicked sister. — "I beg pardon! I lingered by the
 закричать злой сестра. — «Виноватый! замѣшкаться»,

way", replied the poor child, and at the same instant
 отвѣчать бѣдняжка, и въ тотъ самый минута

there issued from her pretty lips two roses, two pearls,
 скатываться изъ онъ прекрасный губа два роза, два жемчужина

and two large emeralds. "What do I see?" exclaimed
 и два большой изумрудъ. «Что я видѣть?» восклицать

the mother astonished. "These are flowers! these are precious
 мать удивлённый. «Этотъ цвѣтъ! этотъ драгоценный

stones! What has happened to thee?" — The young girl
 камень! Что случиться съ ты?» — Красавица раз-

related to her with simplicity her meeting with the fairy,
 сказывать онъ простоудшно о своей встрѣча съ волшебница

and while doing it the flowers, diamonds and pearls
 и между тотъ цвѣтъ, алмазъ и жемчугъ

issued just so from her lips. "Good!" muttered
 сыпаться такъ съ онъ губа. «Хорошій же!» проворчать

the mother; "to-morrow I will send to the wood my elder
 мать; «завтра посылатъ въ роща мой старый

daughter, and it will be the same with her."

дочь, и быть тотъ же съ онъ.»

And the next morning she said to her daughter:

И на другой утро онъ сказывать своей дочь:

"To-day thou shalt go to fetch water: take the pitcher; but
«Нынче ты пойти за вода: взять кувшинъ; но
pay attention, if thou meetest at the spring an old woman,
смотреть же, если встрѣчать у источникъ старушка,
give her to drink, and be very civil to her."
давать онъ напиваться, и хорошенько приласкиваться къ онъ.»

The wicked girl frowned, took the pitcher with ill
Злой дѣвчонка нахмуриваться, взять кувшинъ съ

humour; went to the wood against her will, and grumbled
досада; пойти въ роща нѣхотя, и ворчать
all along the road. The good old woman was already
весь въ дорога. Старушка сидѣть уже

seated near the spring. "Draw me some water, my
у источникъ. «Зачерпать я вода, мой

dear!" said she to the young girl; "it is hot, I wish
милый!" сказать онъ дѣвчонка; «(есть) жаркій, хотѣть
to drink." — "What stuff! I am not come here
напиваться.» — «Какъ бы не такъ! Я не прійти сюда за то,

to serve old vagabonds; thou wilt have to drink
чтобы услуживать старый бродяга напиваться и

without me." — "How rude thou art!" said the old
безъ я.» — «Какій же грубый ты!» сказывать ста-

woman to her; "I will punish thee. From this moment with
рушка онъ; «я наказывать ты. Съ этотъ порѣ при

each of thy words there shall issue from thy mouth either
каждый твой слово выпадать изъ у ты ротъ или

a serpent or a frog." She disappeared, and the wicked
змѣя или лягушка.» Онъ изчезать, а злой

girl ran home after having broken her pitcher
дѣвчонка побѣжать домой разбивать свой кувшинъ

from spite. "What hast thou to tell me my dear daughter?"
 съ досада. «Что сказывать, милый дочка?»

asked her mother, when she saw her at a distance. —
 спрашивать мать, видеть онъ издалика. —

"I have nothing to tell!" answered the daughter; and all
 «Нечто сказывать!» отвѣчать дочь; и

at once there issued from her mouth two vipers and two
 вдругъ выскакивать изъ онъ ротъ два змѣя и два
 toads. "What do I see! what horror!" cried the mother;
 жаба. «Что я видеть! какой страхъ!» закричать мать;

"but it is thy sister who is the cause of all that! I
 «но твой сестра (естю) виноватый въ весь этотъ! Я
 will make her feel it." And they ran to beat the young girl.
 давать онъ знать.» И онъ бросаться бить меньшей дочь.

Frightened by their threats, she went to hide herself in
 Испугаться угроза, онъ скрываться въ
 the wood, ran long without daring to look behind her,
 роща, бѣгать долго, не смѣть оглядываться,

fled very far and at last lost herself. But this
 забѣгать далеко, и наконецъ потерять дорога. Но этотъ
 was for her good. The son of the king, who was
 быть къ онъ счастье. Сынъ царскій, который

amusing himself at that time with hunting, was just
 забавляться тутъ охота, находиться въ тотъ

then in the wood; he saw the young girl, who, seated
 время въ роща; увидѣть красавица, который, сидѣть
 on the grass, was weeping bitterly. "What has happened to
 на травѣ, плакать горько. «Что слѣлаться съ
 thee? why dost thou weep, my dear?" asked he, taking
 ты? о что ты плакать, милый?» спрашивать онъ, взять
 her gently by the hand. — "Alas! how can I help
 онъ ласково за рука. — «Богъ мой! какъ я не

weeping! My mother has driven me out of the house." She
 плакать! Матушка выгонять я изъ домъ. Онъ
 spoke, and the flowers and the precious stones issued from
 говорить, а цвѣтъ и драгоценный камень сыпаться съ
 her rosy lips, and her tears were changed into pearls.
 розовый губа, и слеза обращаться въ жемчужина.

"What is the meaning of that?" asked the son of the king;
 «Что значить это?» спрашивать сынъ царскій;
 "whence come these flowers, these pearls and these stones?"
 «отъ что этотъ цвѣтъ, жемчугъ и камень?»

The poor child related to the prince what had
 Бѣдняжка разсказывать царскій сынъ о томъ, что

happened to her. He became in love with her, and
 случаться съ онъ. Онъ полюбить онъ, и

he loved her more on account of her being so good and
 полюбить ещё болѣе за то, что онъ быть такъ добрый и
 so pretty, than on account of her flowers and precious
 милый, нежели за онъ цвѣтъ и драгоценный

stones. He took her with him, presented her to the king
 камень. Онъ взять онъ съ себя, представлять онъ царь,

his father, whom she pleased also, and the king
 свой отецъ, который онъ понравиться также, и царь

permitted his son to marry her. Thus she became
 позволять сынъ жениться на онъ. Такой образъ онъ сдѣлаться

a princess, and on the death of the king, when her husband
 царевна, а по смерть царь, когда онъ мужъ

mounted the throne of his ancestors, she became queen,
 восходить на престолъ отцовскій, царица,

and was a good queen. And her wicked sister, what
 и быть добрый царица. А онъ злой сестра, что

happened to her? She closed her life in a miserable
 сдѣлаться съ онъ? Онъ кончать свой жизнь жалостный

way. Her mother, whom she vexed and irritated incessantly, was forced to drive her from house: престанно, быть принуждённый выгонять онъ изъ домъ; nobody would give her an asylum, and she went to hide никто не хотѣть давать онъ пристанище, и онъ скрывать herself in the forest, where she died shortly after of vexation ся въ лѣсъ, гдѣ умирать скоро съ досада and hunger.
и голодъ.

CONSTRUCTION.

84.—The grammatical order of the words in Russian is further removed from the natural construction, and inversions are more frequent than in English, French or even German; this however causes no obscurity, in as much as the inflections of the words sufficiently indicate their relative concord or dependence. With respect to the order of the propositions in the sentence, it is nearly the same in the four languages, as is seen in the following examples.

Если гѣній и дарованія ума If genius and talents merit
имѣютъ право на благодар- the gratitude of the nations,
ность народовъ, то Россія Russia owes a monument to
должна Ломоносову монумент- Lomonossof. *Karamzin.*
томъ. *Karamzinъ.*

Побѣды, завоеванія и величіе The victories, the conquests
государственное, возвысивъ and the grandeur of the empire,
духъ народа Россійскаго, имѣли by elevating the intelligence
счастливое дѣйствіе и на самый of the Russian nation, had a
языкъ его, который, будучи happy influence even on the
управляемъ дарованіемъ и language, which, when em-

вкусомъ писателя умнаго, можетъ равняться нынѣ въ силѣ, красотѣ и пріятности съ лучшими языками древности и нашихъ времёнъ.

Карамзинъ.

employed by the talent and the taste of man of genius, can now rival in strength, beauty and delicacy the noblest tongues of ancient and modern times.

Karamzin.

Повелитель многихъ языковъ языкъ Россійскій не только обширностію мѣстъ, гдѣ онъ господствуетъ, но кѣпно и собственнымъ своимъ пространствомъ и довольствіемъ великъ передъ всеми въ Европѣ. Карлъ V, Римскій Императоръ, говаривалъ, что Испанскимъ языкомъ съ Богомъ, Французскимъ съ друзьями, Нѣмецкимъ съ непріятелями, Италійскимъ съ женскимъ поломъ говорить прилично. Но если бы онъ Россійскому языку былъ искусенъ, то конечно къ тому присовокупилъ бы, что имъ со всеми оными говорить пристойно. Ибо нашёлъ бы въ нёмъ великолѣпіе Испанскаго, живость Французскаго, крепость Нѣмецкаго, нѣжность Италійскаго, сверхъ того богатство и сильную въ изображеніяхъ краткость Греческаго и Латинскаго языка.

Ломоносовъ.

The Russian language, the parent of many others, is superior to all the languages of Europe not only by the extent of the countries where it is dominant, but also by its own comprehensiveness and richness. Charles the Fifth, Emperor of the Romans, said that one ought to speak Spanish to the Divinity, French to one's friends, German to one's enemies and Italian to ladies. But had he been acquainted with Russian, he would assuredly have added that one could speak it with each and all. He would have discovered in it the majesty of the Spanish, the vivacity of the French, the strength of the German, the sweetness of the Italian, and in addition energetic conciseness in its imagery with the richness of the Greek and Latin.

Lomonosoff.

THIRD PART

ORTHOGRAPHY.

USE OF THE LETTERS.

85.—We have already seen (§ 7—10) that several letters lose their own peculiar sound, taking that of the letter with which they have the closest affinity, and that certain other letters are silent, disappearing entirely in the pronunciation. In such cases the object of *Orthography* is to indicate the letter which has lost its own peculiar sound and taken an accidental one; and, to do that, recourse must be often had to etymology, in order to discover a derivative and give it, by the help of the grammatical forms, such an inflection as may serve to show the form of the doubtful letter.

Vowels. 86.—Several vowels are often confounded in writing, on account of the close affinity or perfect identity of their pronunciation. As this confusion arises almost invariably from the absence of the tonic accent, it is necessary, in order to discover the form of the letter, to find a derivative or an inflection of the word where the doubtful vowel is accented. Thus:

we write :
 ямщикъ (and not емщикъ), a postilion.
 яйцѣ (and not ейцѣ), an egg. . . .
 ячмѣнь (and not ечмѣнь), barley. . .
 тяну (and not мену), I draw. . . .
 вяжу (and not вежу), I bind. . . .
 жалю (and not желю), I pity. . . .
 шалуъ (and not мелуъ), a rogue.
 часы (and not чеси), a watch. . . .
 щадѣть (and not щедѣть), to spare.
 молитва (and not малитва), a prayer.
 вдова (and not едова), the widow. .
 говорить (and not :аварить), to speak.

because we say :
 ямъ (primitive word), a relay.
 яйца (nom. plur.), eggs.
 ячный (derivative), of barley.
 тянутъ (3d pers. pl.), they draw.
 вяжешь (2d pers. sing.), thou bindest.
 жалъ (primitive), pity.
 шулюсть (derivative), roguery.
 часы (primitive), the hour.
 щадѣла (derivative), pardon.
 онъ молютъ (3d pers. sing.), he prays.
 вдовы (nom. plur.), the widows.
 говоръ, speaking, & разговоръ, discourse.

Е. Ъ. — The two vowels most commonly confounded are *e* and *ъ*. In order to know which of them ought to be used, recourse must be had to the dictionary. We may however observe that the letter *ъ* is never used in words taken from foreign languages; as: кадѣтъ, a cadet; слѣсарь, a locksmith (Germ. Schloßfer); пѣня, fine (Lat. *pæna*), excepting in Вѣна, Vienna, which is properly speaking a Slavonic word. Sometimes the vowel *и* (or *i*) is changed in the derivatives into *ъ*; as: бесѣда, conversation; дѣти, children; Алексѣй, Alexis; Сергѣй, Sergius; Апрель, April (from сидѣть, to be seated; дитя, child; Алексѣй, Sergѣй, Апрель). In the words лѣкарь, a physician; лѣкарство, a medicine; лѣчить, to heal, &c.; which some persons write лѣкаръ, лекарство, лечить, the Dictionary of the Russian Academy preserves the letter *ъ*. These vowels may in some occasions be distinguished. As the vowel *e* is in certain cases pronounced *io* or *o*, and the vowel *ъ* has this sound only in some words (§ 8), it is necessary to look for an inflection or a word in which the doubtful vowel is accented. Thus:

we write :
 слеза (and not слъза), the tear.
 ель (and not ъль), the fir.
 березникъ (and not беръзаникъ), a birch kopse.
 лѣдникъ (and not льдникъ), an ice-house. .
 утвердѣть (and not утъвердѣть), to affirm.
 угнетѣние (and not укънетѣние), persecution,

on account of :
 слѣзы (nom. plur.), the tears.
 ѣлка (diminutive), a little fir.
 берѣза (primitive), a birch.
 лѣдъ (primitive), ice.
 твёрдый (primitive), firm.
 тѣтъ (primitive), stick for packing.

Е. Э. — The vowel *э* is used at the beginning of the Russian words эй, ho! эхъ, hey! этотъ, this; экой and экакой, oh what! also at the beginning of foreign words and after a vowel; e. g. экваторъ, the equator; эфиръ, ether; поэма, a poem;

поэтъ, a poet. After *i* we can in this case employ the vowel *e*, as in мѣса, a piece. Such words as had been incorporated into the Russian language before the vowel *э* was in use, are written with *e*; as: евангеліе, the gospel; епископъ, a bishop; епархія, a diocese; еunuхъ, an eunuch; Европа, Europe, and some others. The vowel *e* is further used for the Latin or German letters *je*, *gi* and *ge*; as проѣктъ, a project; реѣстръ, a register; ефѣсъ, the sword-hilt, ефрейторъ, a corporal (Lat. *projectum*, register; Germ. *Gejäß*, Gefreiter).

II. I. — The vowel *i* is used, instead of *u*, before all the vowels and before the semi-vowel *й*; as: сіе, that; приучать, to accustom; пріятный, agreeable; гѣній, genius, as also in the word міръ, the world, and its derivatives: мірско́й, worldly; всемі́рный, universal; Влади́миръ, Vladimir, to be distinguished from миръ, peace, and its derivatives; as: мі́рный, peaceful; ми́рять, to reconcile; смі́рный, calm. In words formed from the numerals, as: пяти-аршинный, of five yards; семи-уго́льный, heptagon, &c., the letter *u* is retained, but a hyphen must be placed between the two parts of the word. In the word мѣро, the holy oil, and its derivatives: муропома́заніе, unction; мунобо́сница, bearer of aromatics; муропома́занникъ, the Lord's anointed, the Slavonic letter ѱѣсѣца has been retained.

II. Ы. — The vowel *ы* is formed by the union of *э* and *и*; in compound words however it is necessary to retain the form of these two letters, and write, for instance: предше́дшій, preceding; безы́мянный, anonymous, &c. It is only in the words compounded of иска́ть, to seek, and игра́ть, to play, that the letters *э* and *и* are joined and form *ы*; e. g. сы́щикъ, an emissary; ро́зыскъ, the inquiry; сыгра́ться, to play quits; разыгра́ть, to raffle for (instead of сѣи́щикъ, рѣзѣ́искъ, сѣигра́ться, разѣигра́ть). — In foreign words after *ц* the vowel *и* is employed, although pronounced *ы*; thus we write медицина, medicine; цѣркуль, compasses; цѣфра (which some persons write цѣфра), a cipher; excepting цыга́нь, a gypsy, and цыфѣ́рь, ciphers. — In the adjectives it is necessary to distinguish the terminations *ыѣ* and *иѣ*, as: по́стный, of Lent; лѣтний, of summer, and its compounds: совершеннолѣ́тний, of full age; столѣ́тний, centenary; &c.; the word малолѣ́тний, young is an exception.

87.—The semi-vowels (ѣ, ъ, ѱ), the two first of which are placed after consonants, and the last after vowels, are vowels only half uttered (§ 9), ѣ being half of the vowel *o*, ъ half of the vowel *u*.

The semi-vowel ѣ at the end of words may be used after all the consonants, while the semi-vowel ъ cannot be placed either after the gutturals (г, к, х) or the lingual (л). The hard or liquid sound of these two letters, which is generally perceived after consonants, as: *братъ, the brother*, and *братъ, to take*; *пыль, flame*, and *пыль, dust*; *станъ, the stature*, and *станъ, become*, is not distinguished after the hissing letters (ж, ч, ш, щ), as in the words: *ножь, a knife*, and *ложь, a lie*; *мечъ, a sword*, and *сѣчь, to cut*; *камышъ, the reed*, and *мышъ, a mouse*; *тощъ, fasting*, and *нощъ, the night*.

In the middle of a word the semi-vowel ъ is placed after all the consonants, excepting г, к, х, ц; e. g. *судьба, destiny*; *весьма, very*; *обезьяна, a monkey*; *деньги, money*; *письмо, a letter*; *польза, utility*; *сельдь, a herring*; *тюрьма, the prison*, &c. The semi-vowel ѣ, in words formed with a preposition, is only retained before the vowels, *e, u, ѣ, ю, я*; as: *отъѣмю, I take away*; *предъидущій, preceding*; *въѣхать, to enter*; *объюродѣть, to become a fool*; *объявить, to announce*. The same is the case with the Latin prepositions *ad* and *ob*, as in the words *адъютантъ, an adjutant*; *объективный, objective*.

The semi-vowels ъ and ѱ are sufficiently distinct; the former (ъ) can only be used after a consonant, the latter (ѱ) only after a vowel, as we have already seen, § 9.

88.—The feeble consonants (б, в, г, д, ж, з), which, at the end and in the middle of a word before a strong letter, are articulated like their corresponding strong consonants (п, ф, к or х, т, ш, ц, § 10), may be distinguished from the latter by an inflection of the words. Thus:

| | | | |
|-----------|--|--------------------------|----------------------|
| we write: | бобъ, a bean, and цѣпъ, a flail, | ..... | бобѣ and цѣпѣ. |
| | ловъ, capture, and графъ, a count, | ..... | лѡва and графа. |
| | кругъ, a circle, and крюкъ, a hook, | ..... | круга and крюка. |
| | Богъ, God, and духъ, spirit, | on account of gen. sing. | Бога and духа. |
| | кладъ, treasure, and братъ, brother, | ..... | клада and брата. |
| | ножъ, a knife, and ковшъ, a scoop, | ..... | ножа and ковша. |
| | тузъ, the ace, and усъ, the mustache, | ..... | туза and уса. |
| | трубка, a pipe, and шапка, a cap, | ..... | трубокъ and шапокъ. |
| | лавка, a bench, and фейока, a blow-pipe, | ..... | лавокъ and фейоковъ. |
| | булка, sentry-box, and утка, a duck, | on account of gen. pl. | булокъ and утокъ. |
| | кружка, a goblet, and мѹшка, little fly, | ..... | кружекъ and мѹшекъ. |
| | сказка, a tale, and пляска, a dance, | ..... | сказокъ and плясокъ. |

In cases where the change of inflection fails to indicate the doubtful letter, recourse must be had to etymology to discover the root from which the derivative word is formed. Thus:

| | | | |
|-----------|---|----------------|--|
| we write: | просьба, a prayer (and not прѡсѡба), . . . | as coming from | просить, to pray, from the root прос. |
| | женитьба, marriage (and not женѣдѡба), . . | | женить, to marry (in Sl. женѣмѡва). |
| | бѹдочникъ, a sentry (and not бѹточникъ), . | | бѹдка, sentry-box, gen. pl. бѹдокъ. |
| | присѹтствие, presence (and not присѹдѣствѣе), | | сѹть, 3d pers. pl. of есмь, I am. |
| | жѣнный, burnt (and not ежѣнный), . . . | | жжѣшь, 2d pers. sing. of жгѹ, I burn. |
| | рѡбчикъ, a hazelhen (and not рѡпчикъ), . . | | рѡбѡй, with variegated feathers. |
| | грѣчневый, of buck-wheat (and not грѣшневый), | | грѣча, buck-wheat, ч being immutable. |
| | свѣчникъ, a candlestick (and not свѣшникъ), | | свѣча, a candle, from свѣтъ, light. |
| | гудочникъ, violinist (and not гудѡшникъ), . | | гудѡкъ, violin, т and к change into ч. |
| | ветѡшникъ, rag-gatherer (and not ветѡчникъ), | | ветѡшь, a rag, from вѣтъхѹ, old. |
| | наѹшникъ, slanderer (and not наѹчникъ), . | | ѹхо, the ear, х changes into ш. |
| | Волѡшскѹй, Walachian (and not волѡшескѹй), | | Волѡхъ, a Walachian, х ch. into ш. |
| | Вѡлжскѹй, of the Volga (and not вѡлжескѹй), | | Вѡлга, the Volga, з changes into ж. |

The present orthography of the word порѹчникъ, a lieutenant (from поручить, to commit, from рука, the hand), is not in conformity with its etymology; for the termination being чикъ (as in потѡтчикъ, an indulger, from потакѡть, to connive, from такъ, thus), it ought to be written порѹтчикъ, as some persons still write it. Another exception is свѡдѡба, wedding (formerly свѡтѡба), from свѡтѡть, to ask in marriage.

The word столпъ, a column, is written in Slavonic with a п, as also its derivatives: столпникъ, the styite; столпѡтворѣнѣ, the building of the tower of Babel; but in Russian it is written with a б, столѡбъ, a consonant which is retained in the words столбовой, columnar; столѡбѡкъ, basalt; столѡбнякъ, tetanus; остоѡбенѣть, to be stupefied.

3. — The feeble consonant *з* of the preposition *въ* or *воз*, *из*, *низ*, *раз* or *роз*, is changed, in derivatives, before the strong consonants *к*, *п*, *т*, *х*, into its corresponding strong consonant *с*; thus we write: *вспомнить*, to remember; *воспитаніе*, education; *исключить*, to exclude; *исходить*, to descend; *расторгнуть*, to tear up; *рѣчь*, a catalogue (instead of *въпомнить*, *возпитаніе*, *изключить*, *низходить*, *разторгнуть*, *рѣчь*). Before the strong consonants *с*, *ц*, *ч*, *ш* and *щ*, the letter *з* keeps its form, as in *изстари*, formerly; *разцвѣстїи*, to open; *изчѣзнуть*, to disappear; *возшествіе*, accession; *разщѣпъ*, a slit. The prepositions *безъ* and *чрезъ* in this case remain unchanged; thus we write: *безподобный*, incomparable; *чрезчуръ*, excessively (and not *бесподобный*, *чресчуръ*). It is the same with the preposition *сѣ*, which retains its form before a feeble consonant, although it then takes the pronunciation of *з*; thus we should write: *сбавить*, to diminish; *сдѣлать*, to make; *сгонять*, to drive off; *сжимать*, to compress (and not *збавить*, *здѣлать*, *згонять*, *зжимать*).

II. — The compound consonant *ц*, cannot be used instead of *mc* or *dc*, when *m* and *d* are radical letters, and *c* belongs to the termination of the word; thus we write: *плѣтскій*, carnal, from *плоть*, the flesh; *персидскій*, Persian, from the Latin *Persis*, *sidis* (and not *плѣцскій*, *персѣцскій*); but we write: *нѣмецкій*, German, from *Нѣмецъ*, a German; *казакскій*, Cossack's, from *казакъ*, a Cossack. In the numerals we write *дц*, as: *одіннадцать*, eleven; *двѣдцать*, twenty, words contracted from the Slavonic *одѣнь-на-десять*, *двѣ-десять*.

III. — The compound consonant *щ*, in the derivatives, is the commutation of *ск* and *ст*, or else it supplies the place of the consonants *зч*, *шч*, *сч*, as: *вошчить*, to wash, from *вошь*, *гашъ*, to anoint, from *масть*, *башъ*, from *приказъ*, an order; *рѣщикъ*, a cutter, from *рѣзать*, to cut. But the form of the radical letters is retained in the words *счастье*, happiness; *считать*, to count; *счётъ*, *разсчётъ*, an account; *мужчина*, a man, which must not be written *щастіе*, *щитать*, *щѣтъ*, *разщѣтъ*, though we also write *мушчина*.

Ф. Θ. — The consonants *φ* and *θ* are used, the former for Russian words, and such Greek and other words as are

written with *φ*, *f* or *ph*, and the latter for Greek words written with *θ* or *th*; thus we write: *футбайка*, a *jacket*; *семілія*, a *family*; *физика*, *physics*; *Филиппъ*, *Phillip*; *Фотій*, *Photius*; and *ритмъ*, *rhythm*; *рѣма*, *rhyme*; *мифологія*, *mythology*; *Теодоръ*, *Theodore*; *Томъ*, *Thomas*.

Doubling of
consonants.

89.—The consonants are doubled in Russian in the following cases: 1) In the words in *никъ*, *ство*, *ный*, *ній* and *скій*, the radical of which terminates in *н* or *с*; e. g. *плѣнникъ*, a *prisoner*, from *плѣнь*, *captivity*; *искусство*, *art*, from *искусъ*, an *essay*; *истинный*, *true*, from *истина*, the *truth*; *осенній*, *autumnal*, from *осень*, *autumn*; *Русскій*, *Russian*, from *Русь*, *Russia*. The same takes place in adjectives in *енный*, and passive participles in *анный*, *янный*, *енный*, *янный*, e. g. *искусственный*, *artificial*; *дѣланный*, *made*; *заслуженный*, *merited*. These participles must not be confounded with the qualifying and possessive adjectives; as: *учёный*, *learned*; *заслужёный*, *emerited*; *кожаный*, *of skin*; *серебряный*, *of silver*, which are written with a single *н*.—2) In such words as are formed with a preposition, where the initial consonant of the primitive is the same as the final consonant of the preposition; e. g. *беззубый*, *toothless*; *вводить*, to *introduce*; *подданный*, *subject*; *ссылка*, *exile*.—3) In the preterit of the pronominal verbs, when the verb ends in the consonant *с*; as: *разнёсся*, it *has spread itself*; *спасся*, he *has saved himself*.—4) When by the change of a commutable letter two consonants come together, as in the verb *жгы*, I *burn*, which, by the change of *г* into *жс*, is in the second person *жжѣшь*, and in the passive participle *жжённый*; and in *вожжъ*, a *rein*; *вожжать*, to *bridle*,

from водѣть, to lead, by the change of ѣ into ие.—

5) Lastly consonants are doubled in some foreign words; e. g. аббатъ, an abbot; суббота, Saturday; акула, a shark; классъ, a class; колосъ, a colossus; коллегія, a college; металлъ, a metall, &c.

90.—The capital letters (прописныя буквы) are ^{Capital letters.} employed, generally speaking, in Russian as in English. Thus a capital letter is placed at the beginning of every sentence, of every line of poetry, of all the proper names of men, places, nations, rivers, mountains and winds, as also of all those of a science, an art or a profession, if taken in an individual sense which distinguishes the particular science, art or profession from every other. All titles and ranks joined to a proper name must also be distinguished by an initial capital, and the same is the case with the appellative names of tribunals, companies and corporate bodies.

DIVISION OF WORDS INTO SYLLABLES.

91.—The division of words into syllables, when one part has to be carried on from one line to another, is marked by the hyphen, and is performed according to the following rules which are based on the etymology of the words:

1. Monosyllables, as: страсть, passion; здравъ, in health; чувствъ, of the senses (gen. pl.), cannot be divided.

2. Prepositions and every other affix, whether initial or final, may be separated from the rest of the

word; e. g. от-ра́да, *mitigation*; о-тра́ва, *poison*; без-ко́неч-ный, *infinite*; востóкъ, *the East*; мел-вѣ́дь, *a bear*; ра́з-у́мъ, *reason*; сво́йство, *property*; ям-щи́къ, *a postilion*; зѣм-скі́й, *terrestrial*; дру́жба, *friendship*; Па́рь-гра́дъ, *Constantinople*, &c.

3. The compound consonants *жд*, *ст*, as also *кс*, *кз*, *нс* and *ѣс* in foreign words, cannot be divided; e. g. ме́-жду, *between*; три́-ста, *three hundred*; Але-ксáндръ, *Alexander*; э-кzáменъ, *examination*; кле-псидра, *a clepsydra*; Ро́джеръ, *Roger*.

4. The final vowels, as: *сво́я*, *his*; *круто́е*, *steep*; as well as the terminations of the verbs, as: *пою́тъ*, *they sing*; *стро́ять*, *they build*; *жалѣ́еть*, *he regrets*, cannot be separated from the rest of the word.

ORTHOGRAPHY OF ISOLATED WORDS.

Russian
words.

92.—Every Russian word is written as a single word, if by the loss of one of its component parts the sense would be changed; e. g. соуча́стникъ, *an accomplice*; избра́нный, *elected*; отче́тъ, *an account*; при́быль, *a gain*; морехо́дь, *the navigation*; водопрово́дь, *an aqueduct*, &c. On this subject the following rules must be observed:

1) The prepositions which are employed both conjointly and separately (§ 76), are written conjointly: *a*) Before the verbs and words derived from them; e. g. прино́сить, *to bring*; прино́съ, *a gift*; приноше́ние, *the offering*; прино́ситель, *a bearer*, &c. *b*) Before such other parts of speech as are not used without the preposition; as: на́выкъ, *the habit*; извѣ́стный, *known*; встарь, *anciently*;

НАВЗНИЧЬ, *backwards*; ОЗЕМЬ, *on the ground*. c) Before nouns, adjectives, pronouns and adverbs as form with the preposition an adverb or a conjunction; e. g. ВСТАРИНУ́, *formerly*; ИЗВНѢ́, *from without*; СНАЧАЛА́, *in the first place*; ВСТѢДѢ́, *in the footsteps*; ПОТОМУ́, *hence*. If the noun from which the adverb is formed, is determined by another word, the preposition is written separately; e. g. СЪ НАЧѢ́ЛМЪ ВѢ́КА, *at the beginning of the century*; ПО ТОМУ́ СЛУ́ЧАЮ, *on this occasion*. The adverbs ВО-ПЕРВЫХЪ́, *firstly*, ВО-ВТОРЫХЪ́, *secondly*; ПО-РУССКИ́, *in Russian*; ПО-СОЛДА́ТЕКЪ, *like soldiers*, and others similar, as also the compound prepositions ИЗЪ-ЗА́, *from behind*, and ИЗЪ-ПО́ДЪ, *from under*, are written with the hyphen (§ 94, 2).

2. The prefix particle *нѣ* is always written conjointly with the pronoun or the adverb following; as: НѢ́КТО, *some one*; НѢ́КОТОРЫ́Й, *some*; НѢ́КОГДА́, *once*.

3. The particle *ни* is written conjointly in the words НИ́КТО́, *nobody*; НИ́ЧТО́, *nothing*; НИГДѢ́, НИ́КУДА́, *nowhere*; НИКОГДА́, *never*; НИКА́КЪ, *not at all*, and separately in all other words; as: НИ́ КОТО́РЫЙ, *none*; НИ́ зерна́, *not a grain*.

4) The negative *не* is written separately before verbs and the circumstantial adverbs; as: не смѣ́ю, *I dare not*; не здѣ́сь, *not here*, with the exception of verbs whose proper meaning is changed by the negative *не*, or which are not used without the negative; as: недоставáть, *to be wanting*; ненавѣ́дѣть, *to hate*; недо́вѣрять, *to distrust*. It is written conjointly with nouns, qualifying adjectives and adverbs, when the negation refers to the object

or to the quality, and not to the verb; e. g. *неравенство нравовъ* бываетъ причиною споровъ, *dissimilarity of character is the cause of the quarrels*; *несносная скѣка* убиваетъ меня, *an unbearable enemy is killing me*; я гуляю неохотно, *I walk against my will*; and also when the noun has no meaning without the negation; e. g. *нѣтопырь*, *a bat*; *негодѣй*, *a good-for-nothing*; *нѣдугъ*, *a disease*. With the participles the negative *не* is written conjointly when, like the adjectives, they serve to determine the nouns; and separately when, like the verbs, they have a complement; e. g. *незнающій* человекъ, *an ignorant man*; человекъ, *не знающій* своихъ обязанностей, *the man who is ignorant of his duties*.

5. The particle *бы* or *бѣ* is written conjointly only in the conjunctions *чтобы* (or *чтобѣ*) and *дабы*, *that*; everywhere else it is written separately. It is necessary to distinguish the conjunction *чтобы* from the pronoun *что* with *бы*; e. g. *желаю, чтобы онъ далъ тебѣ эту книгу*, *I wish him to give you this book*; *что бы далъ я за эту книгу*, *what would I have given for this book!* In the latter case *бы* is written separately.

6. The conjunction *уже* or *ужѣ* is conjointly written in the words *ужѣ* or *ужѣ*, *already*; *даже*, *even*; *ниже*, *not even*, and separately in the other words; as: *или же*, *or even*; *однако же*, *however*; *тотъ же*, *the same*. It is also written conjointly in the copulative conjunction *также*, and the adverb *тоже*, *too*; but it is written separately in the comparative conjunction *такъ же*, *as well*, and in the pronoun *то*

же, *the same*; е. г. онъ такъ же хорошо пишетъ, какъ читаетъ, *he writes as well as he reads*: онъ такъ же дворянинъ, *he is also gentleman*; я боленъ и онъ тоже, *I am sick and he too*; я говорю то же, что и вы, *I say the same thing as you*.

93.—Foreign words are written with those letters Foreign words. of the Russian alphabet, which give as closely as possible the pronunciation of these words in the language from which they are borrowed: the rule is the base of the orthography of foreign words. Such are for instance the words: епархія, *a diocese*; кáведра, *the pulpit* (*Gr. ἐπαρχία, κάθεδρα*); сенáторъ, *a senator*; корóна, *a crown* (*Lat. senator, corona*); áжio, *theagio*; карéта, *a carriage* (*Ital. agio, carreta*); футъ, *a foot*; сплннъ, *the spleen* (from the *English*); актёръ, *an actor*; медáль, *a medal* (*Fr. acteur, médaille*); брѣстерь, *the parapet*; кѣчеръ, *a coachman* (*Germ. Brustwehr, Kutscher*); ватерпáсъ, *a level*; фарвáтеръ, *the channel* (*Dutch: waterpas, vaarwater*); вѣнзель, *a cipher*; трактёръ, *an eating-house keeper* (*Pol. wozel, traktyer*). Some of these words in passing into the Russian language have taken terminations peculiar to it, while others have undergone an alteration both in their pronunciation and orthography; such are: фитиль, *a match*; фонарь, *a lanthorn* (*mod. Gr. φητίλ, φαῖάριον*); алтáрь, *an altar*; мрáморъ, *marble* (*Lat. altare, marmor*); яхта, *a yacht*; мичманъ, *a midshipman* (from the *English*); шпáга, *a sword* (*Ital. spada*); салфéтка, *a napkin*; табакёрка, *a snuff-box* (*Fr. serviette, tabatière*); биржа, *the exchange*; тарéлка, *a plate* (*Germ. Börse, Teller*); шкѣперъ,

master of a merchantship; шлюзъ, *a sluice* (*Dutch: schipper, sluis*), &c.

The same thing takes place in the Greek and Latin proper names; as: Алексáндръ, *Alexander*; Николáй, *Nicholas*; Филипъ, *Philip*; Пáвель, *Paul*; Елéна, *Helen*; Áвгустъ, *Augustus*; Юлiй, *Julius*; Натáлiя, *Nataly*. Some follow the pronunciation of both Greek and Latin; as: Омiръ and Гомéръ, *Homer*; Алкивиáдъ and Алцибиáдъ, *Alcibiades*; Фивъ and Фебъ, *Phæbus*; Биотiя and Беотiя, *Beotia*. Others are formed from the Greek or Latin genitive; as: Биáнтъ, *Bias*; Цицеронъ, *Cicero*; Артемiда, *Artemis*; Илиáда, *the Iliad*; Венéра, *Venus*; Церéра, *Ceres*.

The proper names of lands, countries, rivers, towns and other names of modern geography, some retain their Latin denomination; as: Гермáния, *Germany*; Áвстрия, *Austria*; Спiция, *Sicily*; Неáполь, *Naples*; Флорéнция, *Florence*; Везúвий, *Vesuvius*, &c. Others are written as they are pronounced in the language to which they belong; as: Лондонъ, *London*; Чéльси, *Chelsea*; Гриничъ, *Greenwich*; Мюнхенъ, *Munich*; Маiнцъ, *Mayence*; Брюссель, *Brussels*; Маáсъ, *the Meuse*; Шéльда, *the Scheldt*; Рейнъ, *the Rhine*; Кордóва, *Cordova*; Хéресъ, *Xeres*; Бадахóсъ, *Badajoz*; Схевенингенъ, *Schevening*; Кéльнъ, *Cologne*; Рéгенсбургъ, *Ratisbon*; Литтихъ, *Liege*; Ахенъ, *Aix-la-Chapelle*; Карлсрýэ, *Carlsruhe*; Пиачéнца, *Piacenza*; Ливорно, *Leghorn*; Бордó, *Bordeaux*; Марсéль, *Marseille*; Лоáра, *the Loire*, &c. Some of these names have passed into the Russian through another language; such

are: Пари́жъ, *Paris* (from the Italian *Parigi*); Римъ, *Rome* (from the Polish *Rzym*); Копенга́генъ, *Copenhagen* (from the German *Kopenhagen*, instead of the Danish *Kiøbenhavn*). Some German names of countries and towns inhabited by Slavonian tribes have been replaced by Slavonic names; as: Вѣна, *Vienna*; Бресла́въ, *Breslau*; Тору́нь, *Thorn*; Льво́въ, *Lemberg*; Вѣнгра́, *Hungary*, and some others.

The proper names of historical persons and others in modern languages are written in Russian according to the pronunciation of the language to which they belong; such are the English names: Ше́кспиръ, *Shakespeare*; Бѣйро́нъ, *Byron*; Ю́мъ, *Hume*; Джо́нсонъ, *Johnson*; Ньюто́нъ, *Newton*; the French names: Рише́льѣ, *Richelieu*; Даву́, *Davoust*; Руссо́, *Rousseau*; Ролле́нъ, *Rollin*; Делі́ль, *Delille*; the German names: Блю́херъ, *Blücher*; Виландъ, *Wieland*; Гёте, *Gœthe*; Га́йднъ, *Haydn*; the Italian names: Херуби́ни, *Cherubini*; Чимаро́за, *Cimarosa*; the Polish names: Чарторы́скій, *Czartoryski*; Пото́цкая, *Potocka*; Нѣмце́вичъ, *Niemcewicz*, &c.

We may here remark that the proper names of the Russian language, the alphabet of which differs from that of the other European tongues, ought to be written in each foreign language in such a manner as to give as closely as possible the Russian pronunciation. Thus the Russian proper names: Кара́мзинъ, Пу́шкинъ, Держави́нъ, Шишкóвъ, Жу́ковскій, Меще́рскій, Чи́черинъ, Каза́нь, Вязьма, Рже́въ, Жито́миръ, are written in English: *Karamzin*, *Pushkin*, *Derzhavin*, *Shishkof*, *Zhukovski*, *Mestcherski*, *Tchitcherin*, *Kazan*, *Viazma*, *Rshof*, *Zhitomir*, in French: *Karamesine*, *Pouchekine*, *Derjavine*, *Clischekof*, *Joukovski*, *Mestcherski*, *Tchitchérine*, *Kazan*, *Viazma*, *Rjef*, *Jitomir*; in German: *Karamsin*, *Puschkin*, *Derzhavin*, *Schischkow*, *Shukowski*, *Mejschtscherski*, *Tschitscherin*, *Kasan*, *Wjazma* or *Wäzma*, *Rishev*, *Schitomir*, and

the same in other languages. Exceptions will be found to this rule in certain proper names which have been adopted long ago; as: Москва́, Санктпетербур́гъ, Варшава́, Мита́ва, and some others; in English: *Moscow, Saint-Petersburg, Warsaw, Mittau*; in French: *Moscou, Saint-Petersbourg, Varsovie, Mittau*; in German: *Moskau, St. Petersburg, Warichau, Mitau*. See the particular Vocabularies of the *Parallel Dictionaries of the Russian, French, German and English languages*.

ORTHOGRAPHIC SIGNS.

94.—The *orthographic signs* (зна́ки правописа́нія) of the Russian language are: the *accent* (уда́рѣніе), the *hyphen* (едини́тельный знакъ or чертѣ́чка), the *sign of brevity* (кра́ткая) and the *diæresis* (наде́трѣ́чное двоѣто́чіе).

1. The *accent* (') serves to distinguish the homonyms or words which though written alike have a different meaning, as also the similar inflections of the words; as: за́мокъ, a castle, and замо́къ, a lock; по́дать, the tax, and пода́ть, to give; стои́тъ, it costs, and стои́тъ, he is up; выхо́дитъ, to obtain, and выходи́тъ, to go out; сло́ва, of the word (*gen. sing.*), and слова́, the words (*nom. plur.*). The accent is further placed on the relative pronoun что́, to be distinguished from the conjunction что; e. g. зна́ешь ли что́ тебѣ́ полѣ́зно, dost thou know what is useful to thee? and зна́ешь ли, что́ тебѣ́ полѣ́зно уче́ніе, dost thou know that study is useful to thee?

2. The *hyphen* (-) is used to mark the connection between two or more words; e. g. Алекса́н-

дро-Нéвская Лáвра, *the monastery of St-Alexander Nevsky*; генерáль-маи́оръ, *major general*; штабъ-офицёръ, *field officier*; Пв́анъ-да-Ма́рья, *cow-wheat*. The hyphen is also used with the adverbs formed from the prepositions *so* and *no*, with the compound prepositions (§ 92. 1), and with the particle *no*; as: какъ-то, *such as*; что-то, *something*. It is also used at the end of a line, when a part of a word has to be carried on to the line following.

3. The *sign of brevity* (◌) is placed over the vowel *u* (ü), converting it into a semi-vowel, which joined with the preceding vowel forms only a syllable; as: мои́, *my*; сей́, *this*; не́идётъ, *he does not go*; на́йтí, *to find*. This mark is also used in prosody to indicate the short syllables, as we shall see when speaking of Russian versification.

4. The *diæresis* (¨) is a double dot which is placed over the vowel *e* (ë), when it has the sound of *io* or *o*; e. g. слёзы, *tears*; жёлты́й, *yellow*. The letter *ë* is also used as the equivalent of the French *eu* and the German *ü*, as in the words Монтескьё, *Montesquieu*; актёръ, *player* (*Fr. acteur*); Гёте, *Gæthe* (*Germ. Göthe*).

MARKS OF PUNCTUATION.

95.—The *marks of punctuation* (зна́ки препи́нанія) are the same in Russian as in English, viz: the *comma* (запятая ,), the *semicolon* (то́чка съ запято́ю ;), the *colon* (двоето́чие :), the *full stop* or *period* (то́чка .), the *note of interrogation* (зна́къ

вопросительный ?), the *note of exclamation* (знакъ восклицательный !), the *points of suspension* (знакъ пресѣкательный), the *dash* (знакъ мыслеотдѣлительный or тирé —), the *parenthesis* (вмѣстительный знакъ or скобки ()), the *inverted commas* or *quotation* (внѣсный знакъ or кавычки «») and the *paragraph* (красная строкá). The use of these marks of punctuation is nearly the same in all languages.

FOURTH PART

PROSODY.

96.—Prosody consists of two parts: 1) *orthoepy* (сло́гоударе́ние), or the measured pronunciation of syllables and words, and 2) *versification* (стихо́сло-же́ние), which teaches the laws of writing poetry correctly.

Division of
prosody.

ORTHOEPY.

97.—In the pronunciation of words attention must be paid not only to the particular articulation of each of the letters of which they may be composed, but also and especially to the accented syllable. The *prosodical* or *tonic accent* (ударе́ние, § 12) is a stress of the voice which is heard in one of the syllables of a polysyllabic word, so that this syllable shall strike the ear more forcibly than the others and appear to predominate over them. Thus in the words вода́, *water*; не́бо, *the sky*; свобо́да, *liberty*; превосхо́дительно́ство, *excellency*, the voice is raised in the syllables *да*, *не*, *бо*, *ду*. The accented syllable is, in prosody, called *strong* or *long*, and the unaccented syllables *weak* or *short*.

Prosodical
or tonic
accent.

Place of the
accent.

98.—The accent, in polysyllabic words, is found:
1) on the radical syllable: ВѢДАТЬ, *to know*; ВѢДО-
МОСТЬ, *information*; НЕВѢЖЕСТВО, *ignorance*; ИСПОВѢ-
ДАТЬ, *to confess*; УВѢДОМИТЬ, *to inform*; ИЗВѢСТІЕ,
news; 2) on the termination: ВѢДУНЪ, *a sorcerer*;
ВѢСТОВОЙ, *orderly*; ИЗВѢСТИТЬ, *to notify*; ЗАПОВѢДНОЙ,
interdicted; 3) on the preposition: ВЫВѢДАТЬ, *to ex-
plore*; ЗАПОВѢДЬ, *commandment*; ПОВѢСТЬ, *a tale*;
СОВѢСТЬ, *conscience*; 4) on the prefix in compound
words: БЛАГОВѢСТИТЬ, *to ring to church*.

These examples show that the accentuation of words in Russian is very variable; and practice and the dictionary can alone enable us to place the accent correctly, as no fixed rules on the subject have hitherto been discovered. We may however remark that a word, when standing alone, may be accented differently to what it is, when joined to other words; thus the pronouns at times lose their accent; again, the nouns and the numerals which have the moveable accent, in the other cases often transfer it to the preposition; in like manner the apocopated adjectives and the verbs transfer it to the negative; e. g. ЧТІ́Й ОТЦА́ ТВОЕГО́ И МА́ТЕРЬ ТВОЮ́, *honour thy father and thy mother*; ДРУЗЬЯ́ МОИ, *my friends*; ПО́ БЕРЕГУ́, *along the shore*; ЗА́ МОРЕМЪ́, *beyond the sea*; ОНЪ́ НЕ́ ВЕСЕЛЪ́, *he is not gay*; Я́ НЕ́ БРАЛЪ́, *I have not taken*. We may here repeat, what we have already indicated in the declensions and conjugations, that, in the change of inflections, the accent is often transferred from one syllable to another.

VERSIFICATION.

99.—The Russian versification, which, like that of England and Germany, is based on the prosodical accent, is termed *tonic* versification; while that of French language and various other modern tongues, depending on the number of syllables employed, is called *syllabic*, and that of the Greeks and Romans, which is based on quantity or the length and brevity of the syllables, is termed *metrical*.

100.—In the tonic versification the verses are also measured by *feet*, as in Greek and Latin. The *foot* (стопа) or *metre* (размѣръ), in Russian poetry, is formed by the union of two or three syllables, one of which has the prosodical accent. The feet employed in the structure of Russian verse are six in number, viz:

1. The *iambus* (ямбъ), composed of two syllables with the prosodical accent on the last, ∪—: зима́, весна́.

2. The *choreus* (хорей) or *trochee* (трохей), consisting of two syllables with the accent on the first, —∪: ле́то, о́сень.

3. The *pyrrhic* (пирри́й), formed of two unaccented syllables, ∪∪: such are the two first syllables of безпо́лезный. The pyrrhic in the middle of a line is used instead of an iambus or a trochee.

4. The *dactyl* (да́ктиль), formed of three syllables with the accent on the first, —∪∪: па́лица, ра́достный.

5. The *amphibrach* (амфибра́хий), formed of three syllables with the accent on the second, ∪—∪: при́чина, пѣ́лю.

6. The *anapaest* (анáпестъ), formed of three syllables with the accent on the last, ∪ ∪ —: человекъ, времяна́.

Denomina-
tion of the
verses.

101.—The verse or line of poetry takes its name from the nature of the feet of which it is composed. There are verses of six, five, four, three, two feet, and even of one, which are termed *iambic*, *choraic*, *dactylic*, *amphibrachic*, *anapaestic*, *dactylo-choraic*, *anapaesto-iambic*, according as they may be formed of a single one of these metres or of a combination of several. The lines which have not the same number of feet are termed *free* verses (вóльные стихи́).

The verses most commonly employed in modern Russian poetry are the following:

1. The *hexameters* or the *dactylo-choraic* verses of six feet, of which the four first are dactyls or trochees, the fifth a dactyl, and the sixth a trochee. This line is an imitation of the Greek and Latin hexameter, from which it differs only in the employment of trochees instead of spondees, which do not exist in Russian. It is used in epic poems, especially in such as are translations from the ancient languages. Ex.

— ∪ — ∪ — ∪ — ∪ — ∪ — ∪ —

Гéкторъ гербóй съ колесни́цы съ ору́жiемъ спряну́ль на зéмлю;
О́стрыя ко́пья коле́бля, потёкъ по ряда́мъ ополчéniй.
Въ бо́й распаля́я Тройнъ; и возжéгъ жесто́кую стýчу;
Всё обрати́лись отъ бѣгства и ста́ли въ лицé Аргивя́намъ.

Гибди́чь.

2. The *iambic* verses of six feet, or *alexandrine* (александрійськіє), are used in great compositions, such as epic and didactic poems, tragedies, comedies, satires, epistles, elegies, idyls, &c.; e. g.

| | | | | | |
|---|---|---|---|---|---|
| 1 | 1 | 1 | 1 | 1 | 1 |
| 1 | 1 | 1 | 1 | 1 | 1 |

Уже блвднѣть день, скрываясь за горюю;
Шумящія сгадѣ толпѣтся надъ рвкѣю.

Жуковскій.

3. The *iambic* verses of five feet, but seldom used; e. g.

Ты говоришь, что мучусь надъ стихомъ,
Что не пишу его, а сочиняю.

Князь Вяземскій.

The iambic verse of five feet is sometimes used alternately with that of six; e. g.

Какое торжество готовить древний Рим?
Куда текутъ народа шумны волны?

Бѣтущиковъ.

4. The *iambic* verses of four feet are used in odes and other lyrical poems; and those of three, two and even a single foot, in songs and other light compositions; e. g.

О ты, что въ горѣсти напрасно
На Бога ропщешь, человѣкъ!
Внимай, коль въ ревности ужасно
Онъ къ Гову изъ тѣчи рекъ.

Домонбсовъ.

Ужé со тмóю нóщи
Простёрлась тишина;
Выхóдитъ изъ-за рóщи
Печáльная лунá.

Канністэ.

Играй, Аделъ,
Не знай печаль!
Хариты, дель
Тебя вьнчаль.

Ал. Пушкинъ.

Ступай,
Сзывай
Съ лѣсовъ
Всѣхъ псовъ
На край
Ай, ай!

Державинъ.

5. The *free iambic* verses are employed in fables, tales, epigrams, epitaphs, inscriptions, &c.; e. g.

Въ прихожей на полу,
Въ углу,
Пустой мышо́къ валялся.
У са́мыхъ низкихъ слугъ
Онъ на обтирку ногъ нерѣдко помыка́лся;
Какъ вдругъ
Мышо́къ нашъ въ честь попался,
И весь червонцами набить:
Въ окóванномъ ларцѣ въ сохранности лежить.

Крыловъ.

6. The *choraic* or *trochaic* verses of six, five, four, three and two feet, sometimes of the same length and sometimes of a different length, are used in various poems. The choraics of four feet are chiefly used in songs; e. g.

— — — — —
— — — — —

Нѣтъ подру́ги нѣжной, нѣтъ прелѣстной Лилы!
Всѣ осиротѣю!
Плачь, Любо́вь и Дру́жба! плачь, Гимѣнь уны́лый!
Сча́стье улетѣю!

Ба́тюшковъ.

Слѣвсья, Алексѣандръ, Елисаветѣ,
До вечерней тихихъ дней зарі;
И сіяніе въ страну полсвѣта
Съ высоты престола распростри.

Бобрѣвъ.

Стонетъ сізый голубѣчекъ,
Стонетъ онъ и день и ночь;
Миленькій его дружечекъ
Отлетѣтъ надѣло прочъ.

Дмитріевъ.

Всѣхъ цвѣточковъ болѣ
Рѣзу я любилъ;
Ею только въ полѣ
Взоръ мой веселилъ.

Дмитріевъ.

Мы сердца́ми
И слеза́ми
Моли́мъ васъ,
Бо́ги гнѣва
И Э́рева,
Въ стра́шный часъ.

Карамзинъ.

7. The *dactylic* verses, composed of dactyls alone, are only used with two, three or four feet, when longer they become fatiguing to the ear; e. g.

— 00 | — 00 | — 00 | — 00 |

Бо́же! Ца́ря храни!
Си́льный, держа́вный,
Ца́рствуй на сла́ву намъ;
Ца́рствуй на стра́хъ врага́мъ;
Ца́рь правосла́вный.
Бо́же! Ца́ря храни!

Жуковскій.

О до́мови́тая ла́сточка!
Ма́ленька, си́зенька пти́чка!
Гру́дь красноба́ла, ко́са́точка,
Лѣ́тняя го́стья, пѣ́ни́чка!

Державинъ.

Рѡза ль, ты рѡзочка, рѡза душистая,
 Всѣмъ ты красавица, рѡза цвѣтокъ,
 Вѣйся, плетися съ лилеей и ландышемъ,
 Вѣйся, плетися въ мой пышный вѣнокъ.

Баронъ Дельвигъ.

8. The *dactylo-choraic* verses of four, three and two feet, are more commonly met with than the pure dactyls, and are used in songs, odes and other lyric poems; e. g.

— — — | — — — | — — — | — — — |

Гдѣ ты, прекрасная, гдѣ обитаешь?
 Тамъ ли, гдѣ пѣсни поётъ Филомела,
 Кроткая ночи пѣвица,
 Сидя на мёртовой вѣтви?

Карамзинъ.

Пчёлка златая,
 Что ты жужжишь?
 Всѣ вокругъ летая,
 Прочь не летишь.

Державинъ.

9. The *amphibrachic* verses of six and five feet are employed in idyls, epistles, elegies; and those of four, three and two feet in various lyrical compositions; e. g.

— — — | — — — | — — — | — — — | — — — | — — — |

Въ часы пированья, при сладостномъ пѣніи струнъ оживлённыхъ,
 Уныніе мрачно на мигъ не оставило милого гостя.
 Снѣдающая горестъ лежить глубоко въ его сердце!
 Умоляйте, пѣсни! да чистую радость раздѣлять согласно.

Мерзляковъ.

Владыка Морвены
 Жилъ въ дѣдовскомъ замкѣ могучій Ордаль.
 Надъ озеромъ стѣны
 Зубчатые замокъ съ холма возвышалъ.

Жуковскій.

Въ то время съ весною
Любѣвъ насъ ждала:
Въ то время . . . со мною
Подруга жила.

Мих. Дми́триевъ.

10. The *anapæstic* verses from one to four feet are used in odes and also in fables; e. g.

— — — — —

Посмотри,
И держи ты въ умѣ,
Нѣсь мужикъ пуда три
На продажу свинцѣ въ небольшой котомѣ.

Сумароковъ.

The *anapæstic* line is sometimes used alternately with the *amphibrachic*; e. g.

Не стремись добродѣтель напрасно
Людей отъ неправды унять.
Въ нихъ пороки плодятся всечасно:
Нельзя ихъ ничѣмъ исправлять.

Богдановичъ.

11. The *anapæsto-iambic* verses are oftener employed than the above mentioned; e. g.

— — — — —

Ты бѣги, бѣги, нашъ злодѣй отъ насъ;
Не дадимъ тебѣ поругаться намъ.
Ты взгляни, взгляни на солдатъ своихъ
Между реберъ ихъ ужъ трава растѣтъ.

Шулѣнниковъ.

102.—The *cæsura* (престѣненіе) is a rest which divides the line of poetry into two parts, each of which is called a *hemistich* or half verse. This rest, which is only found in the *iambic* verses of

six and of five feet, and in the trochaic verses of six feet, requires the word to be finished after the third foot in lines of six feet, and after the second in lines of five. Ex.

Изъ мрачныхъ нѣдръ земныхъ | исходитъ бурный пламень;
Кустарники дрожать, | о камень бѣется камень.

Херасковъ.

И щитъ и мечъ | бросають съ знаменами;
Вездѣ пути | покрыты ихъ костями.

Жукѣвскій.

Здѣсь Гименъ прикованъ, | блѣдный и безгласный,
Гаситъ у гробницы | свой свѣтильникъ ясный.

Батюшковъ.

Though it is not absolutely necessary that the *cæsura* should be always marked so distinctly, still the syllable terminating the first hemistich can never be united with that commencing the second; thus the *cæsura* can never come between a preposition and its complement.

Termination
of the
verses.

103.—The syllable terminating a line of poetry may be either strong or accented, or it may be weak or unaccented. In the former case the termination is *masculine*, and in the latter *feminine*; e. g.

| | |
|---------------------------|--------------------|
| Люблю, любить ввѣкъ буду! | <i>fem. term.</i> |
| Кляните страсть мою, | <i>masc. term.</i> |
| Безжалостныя души, | <i>fem. term.</i> |
| Жестокія сердца! | <i>masc. term.</i> |

Крамзѣнъ.

From this double termination it results that lines of the same metre have not always the same number of syllables. Iambic verses of six feet have twelve syllables with the masculine termination, and thirteen with the feminine; those of four feet have eight syllables with the masculine and nine

with the feminine. Choraic verses of four feet have seven syllables with the masculine termination, and eight with the feminine. The same rule applies equally to the other verses.

104.—The uniformity of sound in the words terminating lines of poetry forms *rhyme* (рѣзма), which is also *masculine* or *feminine*, according to the termination of the verse; e. g.

| | |
|--|-----------------------|
| Кто будетъ приниматьъ мой пѣсень отъ косята? | } <i>masc. rhyme.</i> |
| Кто будетъ безъ тебя, о милая сестра, | |
| За гробомъ слѣдовать въ одеждѣ погребальной, | } <i>fem. rhyme.</i> |
| И мѣро изливать надъ ўрною пелѣчной? | |

Бѣтховиковъ.

Rhymes were introduced into the poetry of such modern tongues as could not imitate the Greek and Latin versification, because, the language of poetry differing in them but little from prose, something was requisite to please the ear; in Russian however, where the accent is strongly marked and supplies the place of quantity, rhyme is not absolutely necessary; the same is the case in English and German, while in French rhyme is indispensable. Poetry without rhyme is called *blank verses* (бѣлые стихи). Verses which in Russian poetry are always written without rhyme, are the hexameters and those imitating metres of the ancient languages.

105.—According to the various combinations of the masculine and feminine rhymes, they are divided into *consecutive* (парные стихи), *alternate* (пере-стѣпные) and *mixed* (смѣшанные). This combination of rhymes is used chiefly in stanzas. A *stanza* or *strophe* consists of a number of verses expressing a complete idea. It varies in length from four to fourteen lines. We here give an example of the strophe of four lines in alternate rhymes, and another of the strophe of fourteen lines, in mixed rhymes and choraic metre.

Бсѣ вокругъ уныло! Чуть зефиръ весенній
 Памятникъ лобзаетъ;
 Здѣсь въ жилищѣ плача, тихій смѣрти гѣній
 Розу обрываетъ.

Батюшковъ.

Разъ въ Крещенскій вечерокъ
 Дѣвушки гадали:
 За ворота башмачокъ,
 Снявъ съ ногъ, бросаю;
 Снѣгъ полоумъ; подъ окномъ
 Слушали; кормили
 Счетнымъ курицу зерномъ;
 Яркій воскъ топилъ;
 Въ чашу съ чистою водою
 Клали перстень золотой,
 Серьги изумрудны;
 Разстилали бѣлый платъ,
 И надъ чашей пѣли въ ладъ
 Пѣсенки подбодны.

Жуковскій.

Poetic
 licenses.

102.—In following the above rules of versification the poet is at time compelled to sacrifice some of the minor principles of grammar, to syncopate terminations, and to place words in an inverted order. These sacrifices to number, harmony, rhyme and elegance, are termed *poetic licenses* (стихотворческія вольности).

CORRECT CONSTRUCTION

OF THE EXERCISES

We started for Potsdam on horseback yesterday at six o'clock in the morning. Nothing can be duller than this road; there is nothing but deep sand everywhere and not a single object of interest meets the eye. The view of Potsdam however, and particularly that of Sans-Souci is very fine. We stopped at an hotel, before arriving to the gates of the town. After resting ourselves and ordering our dinner, we entered the town. At the gate our names were written down. On the parade square, opposite the palace, which is adorned with Roman colonnades, the guards were exercising: the men are superb, and the uniforms splendid. The view of the palace from the garden is very fine. The town is generally speaking well built; in the principal street there are several magnificent houses constructed on the plan of the largest palaces of Rome at the expense of the late king: he gave them to any one he chose. At present these vast edifices are empty or only occupied by soldiers. — At Potsdam there is a Russian church under the care of a Russian soldier, who has lived there from the time of the Empress Anne. We had some difficulty in finding him. The decrepit old man was seated in a large arm-chair, and having heard that we are Russians, he extended his hands towards us and exclaimed with a trembling voice: "Glory to God! Glory to God!" He tried at first to speak

Reading-
Exercise.
p. 18.

with us in Russian; but we had difficulty in understanding each other. We were obliged to repeat almost every word. "Let us go into the temple of God", said he, "and let us pray together, though there is no church festival to-day." My heart was filled with devotion, when I saw the door of this church opened, where solemn silence has reigned so long, scarcely broken by the low sighs and the feeble voice of the old man in prayer, who comes every sunday to read in this spot the holiest of books, which prepares him for a happy eternity. In the church every thing is neat and clean. The books and the church ornaments are kept in a trunk. The old man arranges them from time to time reverently praying. "It often grieves me to the heart", said he, "to think that after my death, which cannot be far distant, no one will take care of this church." We remained half an hour in this holy spot; then bidding the venerable old man adieu, we wished him a peaceful death.

Karamzin.

Exercises on
declension of
substantives
P. 58.

Хозяинъ сада и хозяйка дома. Садъ хозяина и домъ хозяйки. Рыканіе львовъ; пѣніе соловья; мычаніе быка, вола и коровы; ржаніе лошадей; лай собакъ; воркованье голубя; карканье вороновъ; кваканье лягушекъ; вой волка; жужжаніе пчѣль, жуковъ и мухъ; бляеніе барановъ и овецъ. Каминъ безъ огня; окна безъ стѣколъ; каша безъ масла; сѣдла безъ стремень; зарядъ безъ пули; острова и луга безъ деревьевъ; повара, кучера и работники безъ работы; дѣти безъ матери; солдаты безъ ружей; ружья безъ кремней: статуя безъ рукъ и безъ ушей; медвѣжата и львенки безъ шерсти; корабли безъ коекъ; суда безъ вѣселъ; чай безъ сахара и безъ сливокъ. Пукъ перьевъ; дюжина чашекъ, тарелокъ и стакановъ; сотня форелей; десятокъ дынь; множество гусей, утокъ и лебедей; стада скота; табуны лошадей. Мужья древности, и мужья женъ. Цвѣты садовъ, и цвѣта радуги. Листы бумаги, и листья деревъ. Зубы во рту, и зубья у гребня. Колѣна Израилитянъ, колѣни у человѣка, и колѣнья растенія. Ловъ сельдей у береговъ Америки былъ очень выгоденъ для Англичанъ, Шведовъ, Голландцевъ и Франгузовъ.

Совѣтъ друзьямъ. Слава Богу. Горю врагамъ. Приказъ войску. Повиновеніе законамъ. Дай вѣсть гусьямъ, курамъ, голубямъ и щенкамъ. Поступать соотвѣтственно правламъ

чѣсти. Жить прилично состоянію. Законъ, данный какъ дворянамъ, такъ и мѣщанамъ. Противятся желаніямъ дѣтей, и воле родителей. Книги, перья и тетради принадлежатъ ученикамъ, а не учителямъ. Поля и луга принадлежатъ отцу и матери, а сады, какъ и лѣса, сыновьямъ и дочерямъ. Нравятся мужчинамъ, и не нравятся женщинамъ. Зелень нравится глазамъ. Картины нравятся сестрамъ, а цвѣты братьямъ. Полѣзныи отечеству; пріятныи Бѣгу и людямъ; вѣрный Государю; любезныи друзьямъ; милыи дѣтямъ. Человѣкъ познаётся по лицу, по голосу, по росту, по походкѣ и по тѣлодвиженіямъ. Туристы путешествуютъ по Швейцаріи, Франціи, Италіи, Германіи, Америкѣ и Египту.

Братья купили дома, сады, деревню и поля, а продали быковъ, коровъ, лошадей и карету. Читаетъ басню, рисовать картину, писать письма, играть пѣсню, чинить перья. Посещаетъ братьевъ и сестеръ, матерей и дочерей, отцовъ и сыновей. Купитъ шляпу и шапку, перчатки и башмаки, чулки и подвязки. Завоеватель побѣдилъ войска, и покори́лъ народъ. Пѣтръ разбилъ Шведовъ, завоевалъ Эстляндію и Инфляндію, основалъ городъ Санктпетербургъ, и просвѣтилъ Россію. Россіиане побѣждали Татаръ, Турокъ, Шведовъ, Французовъ и Персіянъ. Дожди освежаютъ землю, а холода истребляютъ саранчу.

Дѣти, будьте прилежны! Иванъ, прійди сюда! Воины, сражайтесь храбро! Бѣже, спаси Царя! Господи, помилуй меня!

Ученики пишутъ грифельмъ или перомъ и чернилами. Иванъ играетъ съ Алексѣемъ и съ Василіемъ, а Марья играетъ съ Сѣвѣю и съ Любѣвою. Пирогъ съ миндалемъ; горшокъ съ цвѣтами; кѣдка съ водою; человѣкъ съ умомъ и съ гениемъ; галерея съ картинами. Городъ съ кремлемъ и гаванью; деревья съ листьями, цвѣтами и плодами; киверъ съ султанами; комната съ дверями; хлѣбъ съ солью; вода съ виномъ; вино съ водою; профессоръ съ учениками; письмо съ деньгами. Рисовать карандашѣмъ, писать кистью и красками. Купецъ торгуетъ саломъ, мыломъ, молокомъ, мукою, крупю, виномъ, пивомъ, сукнами, полотнами и кружевами, а сосѣди купца торгуютъ волами, баранами и лошадьми. Дворцы съ башнями; церкви съ колокольнями; дома съ окнами; зданія съ галереями; полки съ знаменами. Горы изобилуютъ золотомъ, серебромъ, мѣдью, желѣзомъ, ртутью и свинцомъ.

Басни о быкѣ и баранѣ, объ ослѣ и соловьѣ; о кузнечикѣ и муравьѣ; о дубѣ и тростникѣ; о лисѣ и воронѣ, о волкѣ и ягнѣнкѣ. Сказки объ ангелѣ-хранителѣ, объ Иванѣ и Марьѣ; повѣсти о Сѣргѣи пустынникѣ, о герое и гѣни. Говоритъ объ играхъ, объ урокахъ, о времени, о мѣстѣ, объ обстоятельствахъ. Въ сочиненіи говорятъ много о чести и безчестіи, о добродѣтели и пороцѣ, о храбрости и малодушіи. Въ водѣ живутъ рыбы, лягушки и слизни, а въ лѣсу живутъ лвы, медвѣди, лисы и зайцы.

Книги ученика нравятся учителю. Свѣтъ солнца озаряетъ землю лучами. Цвѣты розы пріятны глазамъ. Друзья челоуѣчества дѣлають добро людямъ. Въ саду цвѣтутъ розы съ шипами; ибо нѣтъ розы безъ шиповъ. Дѣти умываются водою рѣки. Стаканъ съ водою стоитъ на столѣ комнаты. Слезы радости блестятъ въ глазахъ матери. Слава злодѣевъ непродолжительна; но имена благодѣтелей сіяють въ вѣчности. Счастье на землѣ состоитъ въ спокойствіи духа и въ чистотѣ совѣсти. Юноши любятъ пѣніе соловья, на берегу ручья, при свѣтѣ луны. Говорить правду есть долгъ дѣтей. Любить Бога сердцемъ и душою. Муравьи и бобы могутъ служить примѣромъ челоуѣку. Поѣздка въ Москву и въ Кіевъ. Входъ въ библіотеку для чтенія. Подай учителю тетрадь со стихами на случай праздника. Надоно вставать утромъ, работать днемъ, отдыхать вечеромъ и спать ночью. Громъ пушекъ и звонъ колоколовъ возвестили гражданамъ о прибытіи побѣдителя враговъ отечества.

Exercises on
the adjectives.
p. 83.

Пустой карманъ; карманъ пустъ. Крепкій замокъ; замокъ крепокъ. Вѣрный слуга; слуга былъ вѣренъ. Мягкій воскъ; воскъ мягокъ. Спокойный сонъ; сонъ спокоенъ. Достойный сынъ; сынъ достоинъ. Истинный другъ; другъ истиненъ. Совершенный покой; покой будетъ совершенъ. Прозрачное стекло; стекло прозрачно. Древнее преданіе; преданіе было древне. Теплое лѣто; лѣто будетъ тепло. Тупое перо; перо тупо. Вѣтхая хижина; хижина ветха. Синяя бумага; бумага синя. Новые дома; дома новы. Богатые семьи; семьи были богаты. Красные знамена; знамена будутъ красны.

Бѣлая бумага; бѣлѣйшая бумага; самая бѣлая бумага. Нева быстра, а Волга быстрее. Молоко жидко, а вода жиже. Глубокій ручей; глубочайшая рѣка. Дома высоки, а башни

выше. Хорошій чай; лучший чай; самый лучший чай. Собаки малы; кошки меньше; но мыши малѣйшія. Отецъ молодой; мать моложе; но сестра самая молодая. Сѣно дорога, а солома дороже. Молоко сладко; сахаръ слаще; но медъ самый сладкій.

Блюватая бумага; буроватыя чернила; черноватая вода; краска синевата. Буренная коровка; маленькая лошадка; пѣгенькая лошадка; бѣдненькая дѣвочка; старичёкъ старенецъ; старушка добренька. Пребѣлая бумага; бумага блѣхонька; пресухія дрова; дрова сухощенки.

Хозяинъ обширныхъ садовъ, и хозяйка новаго дома. Стаканъ хорошей воды и краснаго вина; пѣлые горшки свиного сала и еловой смолы. Дѣлай добро бѣднымъ дѣтямъ и дряхлымъ старикамъ, и не ходи по чужимъ полямъ. Вотъ домъ Князя Долгорукаго; вотъ дворецъ Графини Толстой, а вотъ обширные сады молодыхъ Графовъ Завадовскихъ. Я дивился пріятному пѣнію прошлагодняго соловья. Чинить лебединое перо тупымъ ножикомъ. Вотъ гусиныя перья, красныя карандаши, толстыя тетради, дубовыя линейки и большіе циркули, а вотъ суконные кафтаны, тафтяные платки, шелковые чулки, пуховыя шляпы, тонкія полѣтна и тончайшія кружева. Люби непорочныя нравы; читай полезныя книги; чтѣ старыхъ людей; хвали добрыя дѣла; береги честнаго и вѣрнаго слугу. Подари новую книгу самому прилежному ученику. Ты хвалишь весеннюю погоду, ясность лѣтнихъ ночей, осеннюю прохладу и зимніе холода. Я уважаю славныхъ мужей и знаменитыхъ полководцевъ древнихъ временъ. Большіе манёвры нынѣшняго года будутъ въ Красномъ Селѣ и на Дудергофской Горѣ.

Онъ вышелъ изъ отцова дома, и дѣлаетъ добро сестриной дочери. Онъ продалъ жѣнню имѣніе братнину сыну. Посещать Господни храмы и Божіи церкви. Повновѣяться Господней волѣ, и познавать величество Божіа имени. Первая Русская Грамматика была написана безсмертнымъ Ломоносовымъ, и Россійская Исторія Николаемъ Михайловичемъ Карамзиннымъ. Сраженія съ Французами происходили подъ Бородинымъ и подъ Борисовымъ. Я живалъ въ Новогородѣ и въ Бѣльозерѣ. Деревни Княгини Салтыковой лежатъ подъ городомъ Кашинымъ.

Вотъ лисья шуба, соболья шапка, птичье гнѣздѣ, заячьи мѣха и слоновьи зубы. Пудъ оленьяго мяса, аршинъ воловьей кожи, и фунтъ телячьихъ мозговъ. Не ходи по волчьимъ слѣдамъ, и не входи въ медвѣжью берлогу. Разсужденіе о человѣчьемъ глазѣ и о рыбьей головѣ. Онъ торгуетъ рыбыми клѣмъ, бычачьимъ саломъ, козыими шкурами и пѣтушьими грѣбнями.

Хвастѣтъ похожъ на сою, украшенную павлиньими перьями. Сосѣдовъ братъ пріѣхалъ изъ дальняго города, а сестра изъ дальней деревни. Иваново платье узко, но Петрово еще уже. Добренькая старушка живѣтъ въ сырѣмъ домѣ, лежащемъ подъ Царичьинимъ селомъ. Я купилъ медвѣжью шубу съ бобрѣвымъ воротникомъ, и бобрѣвую шапку съ шелковою лентою. Вотъ прекрасная книга въ богатомъ сѣфьянномъ переплетѣ. Гдѣ найдемъ мы примѣръ чистѣйшаго самоотверженія, высшей любви къ отечеству?

Exercises
on the
numerals.
P. 97.

У человѣка одинъ языкъ, одинъ носъ, два глаза, два уха, двѣ щеки, двѣ руки, двѣ ноги, десять пальцевъ на рукѣ и десять пальцевъ на ногѣ, тридцать два зуба, и семь позвонковъ. Въ високосномъ году четыре времени, двѣнадцать мѣсяцевъ, пятьдесятъ двѣ недѣли и два дня, или триста шестьдесятъ шесть дней, или восемь тысячъ семьсотъ восемьдесятъ четыре часа, или пятьсотъ двадцать семь тысячъ и сорокъ минутъ. Въ книгѣ сто листовъ безъ одного. Оба брата и обѣ сестры. Полтора часа, и полторы минуты. Два рубля съ половиною и три копейки съ половиною. Въ берковцѣ десять пудовъ; въ пудѣ сорокъ фунтовъ; въ фунтѣ тридцать два лѣта; въ лѣтѣ три золотника; въ фунтѣ девяносто шесть золотниковъ.

Двѣ пуховыя шляпы, три шелковые платка, четыре перочинныя ножика, пять фарфоровыхъ чашекъ и шесть прекрасныхъ картинъ. Сіи два черныя ворона, тѣ три бѣлыя пера, мой четыре новыя книги; эти пять рѣзвыхъ дѣтѣй. Оба бѣдные сироты и обѣ несчастныя сироты. Двое слугъ, трое мастеровыхъ, четверо дѣтѣй, шестеро солдатъ, двои часы, трои очки, пятеры ножницы. Первые полтора часа. Первые сорокъ дней; вторыя сто ефимковъ, и послѣдняя тысяча гульденовъ.

Я купилъ одного быка и одну лошадь, одинъ столъ и одно зеркало. Двадцать одинъ рубль, пятьдесятъ одна копейка. Тысяча и одна ночь. Молодой человекъ тридцати одного года безъ двадцати одного дня. Не суди о человекѣ по одному проступку и по одной ошибкѣ. Офицеръ съ двадцатью однимъ солдатомъ. Пётръ Первый и Екатерина Вторая царствовали въ осьмнадцатомъ вѣкѣ. Шведы уважаютъ Карла Двенадцатаго, а Французъ поставили памятникъ Генриху Четвёртому. Статья была писана пятнадцатаго числа Января мѣсяца тысяча восемьсотъ двадцать третьяго года, и происшествіе относится къ шестому вѣку, а именно къ пятьсотъ семьдесятъ третьему году.

Шапъ съ дюжиною фарфоровыхъ тарелокъ, или съ двѣнадцатью фарфоровыми тарелками. Дрожки, запряжённые парой воронихъ лошадей, или двумя вороними лошадьми; и карѣта, запряжённая шестью рыжими лошадьми, или шестью коими рыжихъ лошадей. Городъ лежить отсюда въ тысячѣ верстѣ, село во ста верстахъ, а деревня въ сорокѣ верстахъ. Въ Москвѣ было тысяча шестьсотъ церквей, или сорокъ сороковъ церквей. Я довольствуюсь осьмидесятью рублями (или двумя сороками рублѣй) въ мѣсяцъ, то есть девятьюстами шестидесятью рублями въ годъ. Онъ не доживётъ до сорока лѣтъ; и она умерла сорока трёхъ лѣтъ. Она довольна сорока копейками, и она удивилась ста картинами. Онъ не можетъ прожить мѣнѣе ста тысячъ рублѣй въ годъ. Городъ съ двумя башнями; комодъ съ шестью ящиками; домъ съ сорока окнами; крѣпость со ста пушками; церковь о пяти главахъ; домъ о трёхъ ярусахъ; деревня съ четырьмя вѣтряными мельницами. Я люблю равно обоихъ сыновей и обеихъ дочерей. Онъ имѣетъ четверо дѣтей, а она оставила пятеро сиротъ. Мой братъ не могъ сладить съ этими двумя упрямыми лошадьми. Онъ жилъ долго съ своими пятью двоюродными братьями. Къ этому миллиону старыхъ Прусскихъ ефимковъ надобно прибавить тысячу тѣхъ новыхъ рублѣй.

Каждому по сту рублѣй и по сороку копѣекъ. Въ некоторыхъ мѣсяцахъ по тридцати дней, а въ другихъ по тридцати одному дню. Въ каждомъ сараѣ было по двѣ карѣты, а въ каждой карѣтѣ по три мужіины и по четыре жіниины. Каждому по сту по девяносту рублѣй и по сороку по пяти копѣекъ.

У насъ по двадцати по семѣ очковъ. Каждая часть сочиненія продаётся по полутора рубля серебромъ.

По утру не должно судить о полудни. Въ первые полдня онъ не зналъ что дѣлать. Въ четыре часа по полуночи, или въ пять часовъ по полудни. Это случилось въ послѣднѣе полгода тысяча восемьсотъ сорокъ четвёртаго года. Первые полчаса прошли спокойно. Въ продолженіе первыхъ полчаса. За мною было полтора ста тысячъ рублей годоваго дохода.

Exercises
on the
pronouns.
p. 107.

Я люблю тебя, а ты меня обижаешь. Мы уважаемъ его, а её мы любимъ душевно. У меня много денегъ, а у тебя нѣтъ ни копѣйки. Заступись за него, и понадейся на неё. Посиди со мною, и приходи съ нимъ. Скажи ей, чтобъ она пришла ко мнѣ. Безъ него, безъ ней и безъ васъ жизнь мнѣ скучна. Я не вижу ихъ, а я сдѣлаю всё для нихъ. Мы уважаемъ васъ, а вы забыли насъ. Будь во мнѣ увѣренъ: я поговорю о тебѣ. Мнѣ пріятно быть съ нею. Я не доверяю себѣ, а ты доволенъ собою. Мы бережемъ себя, а они себѣ вредятъ.

Мой братъ, твой сестра и его сынъ вмѣстѣ учились. Я стараюсь угодить вашему учителю и нашему смотрителю. Мой домъ красивѣе твоего, а твой собака меньше моей. Я живу безъ нихъ, и могу обойтись безъ ихъ помощи. Не хвались своими трудами, а подумай о своихъ лѣтахъ. Подойди къ моему столу, и подарь денегъ своей сестрѣ. Мы говоримъ о своихъ дѣлахъ, а вы занимаетесь своимъ урокомъ. Ученіе горько, но плоды его сладки. Твой садъ прекрасенъ; я удивляюсь ихъ красотамъ.

Видишь ли эту собаку и этого котѣ, этихъ людей и тѣхъ деревьевъ? Въ этихъ земляхъ нѣтъ золота, и въ тѣхъ нѣтъ серебра. Я слышалъ это отъ вашего брата, но я этому не вѣрю. Я хвалю ваше намѣреніе; давно я предвидѣлъ оное. Давно ли ты живёшь въ семьъ городъ? Я удивляюсь этому саду, а тотъ лучше. Эти перья тупы; сіи домѣ каменные; тѣ улицы узки. Такіе глаза проникательны; такія дѣла не приносятъ чести. Таковы люди.

Человѣкъ, котораго вы видите, очень умёнъ. Книга, которую вы читаете, очень пріятна. Я знаю дѣло, о которомъ вы говорите. Вода, которою я моюсь, очень холодна. Берегись того, кто льститъ тебѣ. Тотъ, у кого много дѣла, не думаетъ о забавахъ. Учитесь тому, чего вы не знаете.

Вот такое сукно, какое я купилъ. Какое былъ военачальникъ, таковы и воины. Вот другъ, въ чьихъ рукахъ моя судьба. Слушайся того, въ чьемъ домѣ ты жилъ. Вот книга, какихъ мало, и случай, каковыя рѣдки.

Который часъ, и въ которомъ часу прийдешь? Какими книгами занимаешься, и какіе люди здѣсь живутъ? Подъ которымъ начальникомъ ты служишь, и какому языку ты учишься? Чьи эти дома? Съ чего позволенія ты вышелъ со двора? Я не видалъ, чью шляпу бросили на полъ. Я не знаю, съ чьими детьми онъ гуляетъ. О чемъ ты заботишься, и чѣмъ я заслужилъ твою дружбу? Съ чѣмъ можно поздравить тебя, и отъ чего ты получилъ эти лѣнги? Сколько вѣреть отъ этого города до того? Изъ сколькихъ томовъ состоитъ сіе сочиненіе? По сколько рублей достанется вамъ изъ этой прибыли?

Ты самъ согласишься со мною: самый звукъ его голоса пріятенъ. Я нанимаю сію квартиру у самого хозяина. Самые пороки находятъ у васъ извиненіе. Онъ всегда говоритъ о себѣ самомъ. Вы недовольны собою самими. Мы видѣли ея самоё. Самая смерть не страшна. Мы все довольствуемся однимъ жалованіемъ. Такъ думаютъ одніе женщины. Мы оба хотимъ служить единому Богу. Въ каждомъ собраніи были граждане обоего пола. Они разсѣяны по всему свѣту. Надобно привыкать ко всякой пищѣ.

Нѣтъ никого здѣсь; не проси помощи ни у кого. Ты не вишь ничего, и это не годится ни къ чему. Учись чему нибудь, и скажи это кому нибудь. Я не продамъ своего дома ни за что, и вы продали свой за ничто. Изъ ничего не сдѣлаешь ничего. Въ теченіе нѣсколькихъ мѣсяцевъ онъ ежедневно покупалъ по нѣскольку сотъ душъ.

Объ сестры дурно говорятъ другъ о другѣ. Англичане и Французы ненавидятъ другъ друга. Мы ходимъ гулять другъ съ другомъ. Сии дома лежатъ одинъ за другимъ. Доски набросаны одна съ другою.

Я дѣлаю добро, сколько я желаю. Ты желаешь учиться. Онъ думаетъ, что знаетъ все науки, и хвастаетъ своими успѣхами. Мы не дерзаемъ вѣрить вашимъ словамъ, хотя вы говорите правду. Мои сосѣди питаются однимъ хлѣбомъ, и уповаютъ на Провидѣніе. Вы торгуете сукномъ, и вы требуете

Exercises on
the verbs.
p. 166.

многого. Голубь воркуётъ; горлица стонетъ; собака лаетъ; щенки брешутъ; лягушки квакають; вороны каркають; лвы рыкають; олень токуётъ; куры кудахчутъ; кошка мяучитъ; быки мычатъ; пчелы жужжатъ; змея шипитъ; орлы трубятъ; соловей щебечутъ; овцы блеютъ; свиный хрюкають; лисица визжатъ; осёл ревётъ; калкунъ клохчетъ; перепёлка вавакаетъ; петухъ кукурекаетъ; сорочка скрекочетъ; попугай болтаетъ. Громъ гремитъ; вода кипитъ; двѣри скрипятъ; ручьи жужжатъ; огонь трещитъ; звѣзды сверкають; солнце светитъ; пчѣлы роются; алмазы блещутъ; сухіе листья хрущатъ; вѣтеръ свистаетъ; снѣгъ таетъ. Солнце озаряетъ землю своими лучами, грѣетъ и живитъ её. Земля обращается вокругъ солнца. Вы напрасно горюете.

Я гулялъ вчера по берегу рѣки, когда солнце садилось. Моя сестра сидѣла подѣ деревомъ, которое качалось вѣтромъ. Вчера мы много работали, читали, писали и рисовали. Овцы мрутъ отъ стужи. Его мать давно умерла. Непріятель заперли его въ крѣпости. Этотъ человѣкъ ослѣпъ, и его жена оглохла. Мои деревья высохли и мои цвѣты завяли.

Москва долго будетъ красоваться во главѣ городовъ Русскихъ. Ты будешь играть, и я буду писать. Россійское государство будетъ непрерывно возвышаться, и всегда приобретѣть болѣе силы и славы. Великій государь никогда не умрѣтъ.

Дѣлай, что тебѣ говорятъ, и не думай упрямиться. Не теряй надежды, и уповай на Бога, Ступайте домой, и не толкуйте столько. Не трать времени, и не мучь жинотныхъ. Говорите всегда правду, и не спорьте о пустякахъ.

Соловей поётъ; лошадь ржётъ; волкъ воетъ. Есть звѣри, которые спятъ всю зиму. Ты берѣшь много на себя, и я не берусь за это дѣло. Зачѣмъ вы имѣете эту книгу? Онъ живѣтъ въ Москвѣ, и слыветъ богатымъ человѣкомъ. Пастухъ стрижѣтъ овецъ; крестьяне прядутъ лёнъ и ткутъ холстъ. Онъ хочетъ спать, и вы хотѣте играть. Мой сосѣд берѣгъ меня, какъ роднаго сына, и не могъ со мною разстаться. Непріятель сожглы многіе города; они увлеклись злобою и мщеніемъ. Пастухъ пасъ овецъ на лугу. Я пошлю за лекаремъ, и ты пришлѣшь мнѣ денегъ. Этотъ городъ цвѣтѣтъ, и онъ долго будетъ цвѣсти силою и богатствомъ. Я дамъ

тебѣ книгу, а что ты дашь мнѣ? Ты не можешь говорить: что онъ дастъ мнѣ за это? Не бери на себя того, чего ты не можешь исполнить. Дѣти, живите мирно, не клянитесь, никогда не лгите, и ведите себя хорошенъко.

Звѣри ходятъ и бѣгаютъ, птицы летаютъ, рыбы плаваютъ, и черви ползаютъ. Посмотри, сюда идѣтъ солдатъ; за нимъ бѣжитъ собака. Видишь, какъ быстро летитъ эта ласточка; онѣ всегда такъ летаютъ. Сей морякъ долго плавалъ по Черному Мѣрю. Что тамъ плывётъ на водѣ? Жѣны Славянъ носили воду и таскали дрова. Что ты несёшь въ этомъ мышкѣ? Смотри, какую вязанку дровъ этотъ человекъ тащитъ. Видѣли тогда, чего не видѣли дотѣхъ.

Непріятель ринулся въ городъ и кинулся на корысть. Молнія засверкала. Молнія сверкнула, грянулъ сильный громъ, земля дрогнула, церковь затряслась. Братъ мой лёгъ и захрапѣлъ; онъ громко храпнулъ и проснулся. Могъ ли надѣяться, что міра моя тронетъ ещё ваше хладное сердце? Солнце заблестало, но не надолго: блеснуло и скрылось. Мы выбросали за окно весь соръ; въ соръ мы выбросили и важную бумагу.

Прошлаго года я хаживалъ въ городъ. Сократъ говаривалъ. Нѣмцы издавна живали въ Новогородѣ. Живучи въ Москвѣ, я вжгалъ въ Троицкую Лавру. Въ молодія лѣта я живалъ въ деревнѣ.

Если бы камни говорить могли, онѣ научили бы тебя осторожности. Если бы кто нибудь вошёлъ къ намъ въ эту минуту, онъ увидѣлъ бы насъ въ отчаяніи, и услышалъ бы наши стенанія и наши вздохи. Есть мало предметовъ въ свѣтъ, на которые я не обращалъ бы вниманія. Нѣ было такого каменнаго сердца, которое не изливалося бы въ слезахъ.

Солдатъ этотъ служилъ долго, и выслужилъ пенсію. Не всякій выслужитъ её съ такимъ отличіемъ. Онъ бывалъ во многихъ сраженіяхъ, и вездѣ отличался блистательною храбростію. Особенно отличился онъ при взятіи одной непріятельской батарее. Онъ первый взобрался на брѣстеръ, убилъ непріятельскаго солдата и взялъ пушку. За это его наградили орденомъ. Потомъ награждали его и другими отличіями. Теперь отправится онъ въ родину, поселится въ своей семьѣ, и будетъ рассказывать о своихъ походахъ, какъ хаживалъ на Турокъ и Французовъ, какъ бивалъ враговъ.

какъ терпѣть голодь, страдать отъ ранъ, и утѣшася мыслію, что служить своему Государю сердцемъ и душою. Уповаи на меня.

Exercises
on the
participles.
p. 176.

Человѣкъ, любящій правду, ненавидитъ ложь. Купающееся дитя; собака, бросающаяся на прохожихъ. Купецъ, получающій товары изъ Лондона, продавалъ ихъ выгодно. Купецъ, получившій товары изъ Лондона, продалъ ихъ выгодно. Страждущій болѣзнію, ищетъ облегченія. Зажгъ потухшую свѣчу, и вытри замёрзшее стекло. Слава герою, спасшему своё отечество. Рыкающій левъ, мычащій быкъ, лающая собака, поющій пѣтухъ, воркующій голубь, выражаютъ свои чувства и желанія.

Море, волнѣемое вѣтрами, устрашаетъ пловцевъ. Дочь, любимая отцемъ, старается заслуживать его любовь. Должно помогать несчастному, гонимому судьбою и преслѣдуемому неудачами. Это снятое молоко, и вотъ третій табакъ. Это заряженное ружьё. На рынкѣ продаются битые гуси, смѣлѣныя верѣвки, откормленные поросята и стриженыя овцы.

Россія обитаема многими народами. Добрые государи любимы своими подданными, и уважаемы соседями. Татары были побѣждены и разбиты на Куликовомъ полѣ. Труды твои будутъ увѣнчаны успѣхомъ. Имена бывають склоняемы, а глаголы спрягаемы. Сей великій полководецъ будетъ чтимъ въ потомствѣ. Москва была разорена и сожжена врагами. Это ружьё заряжено. Эта книга прекрасно переплетена.

Exercises on
adverbs and
gerunds.
p. 181.

Поди сюда, ибо я здѣсь живу. Гдѣ вашъ братъ? Его нѣтъ дома. Куда онъ поѣхалъ вчера вечеромъ? Ты судишь умно, а братъ твой судитъ умнѣе. Я хожу шибко, а ты ходишь шибче. Вы говорите по-русски чисто, а сестрица ваша ещё чище. Завтра поѣдемъ мы далѣко, а чрезъ годъ ещё далѣше. Ты поѣшь хорошо, но она поѣтъ лучше. Я прошу васъ убѣдительноше. Я благодарю васъ покорнѣе.

Гуляя на берегу рѣки, я наслаждаюсь прохладною вѣтера. Жалѣя о несчастныхъ, старайтесь помогать имъ. Я васъ учу, желая вамъ добра, и надѣясь, что вы успѣете въ наукахъ. Не умѣя сдѣлать чего нибудь, проси совета, не краснѣя. Дѣлай добро, не бойсь никого. Не должно ѣсть лежа. Служа отечеству и умирая за него, мы исполняемъ свой долгъ.

Получивъ письмо ваше, и узнавъ, чего вы желаете, я немедленно отвѣчалъ. Отобѣдавши, останься дома. Написавши письмо, положивши въ кувѣртъ и запечатавши, отдай его на почту. Пришедши домой, я сѣлъ писать. Женившись, онъ поѣхалъ въ деревню. Просидѣвши часъ у него, я пошелъ домой; раздѣвшись и легши, я скоро уснулъ.

Безъ надежды нельзя жить въ свѣтъ. Отъ рѣки до лѣсу двѣ версты. О чѣмъ вы говорите? Мы трудимся для общаго блага. Между домомъ и садомъ пространный дворъ съ конюшнями. Бога ради не унывай. Любобъ къ государю и отечеству. Онъ живѣтъ у своего дяди. Солдатъ выскочилъ изъ-за куста. Лучъ солнечный проникаетъ сквозь воду. Этотъ человѣкъ при смерти. Птица летаетъ подъ облаками. Я положилъ книгу подъ столъ. Садитесь за столъ, и сидите за столомъ. Братъ мой ѣдетъ въ Москву, потому что его жена живѣтъ въ Москвѣ. Орѣлъ сидитъ на деревѣ. Эта рѣмка разбилась на мелкія части. Я досадуюсь на брата моего за его лѣность. Не заботься о чужихъ дѣлахъ. Мой другъ ушибся объ уголъ стола. Вода течетъ съ кровли. Вотъ деревья съ листьями, но безъ цвѣтовъ. Эта собака будетъ съ корову. Дѣти бѣгаютъ по двору и по саду. Мы работали отъ перваго по пятое число Августа. Онъ носитъ трауръ по своему брату.

Мой дядя родился и жилъ въ Москвѣ, а не въ Твери. Знаешь ли что нашъ учитель нездоровъ? Ежели вы не придѣте, то я осержусь. Спроси у него, хочетъ ли онъ ѣхать, или намѣревается остаться дома. Онъ заботится болѣе о братѣ нежели о сестрѣ. Прийтие дѣлать добро другимъ, чѣмъ самому получать благотворенія. Пусть онъ придѣтъ; пускай они уѣдутъ. Да солнце васъ не застанетъ на ложѣ. Да здравствуетъ Царь. Чѣмъ прилѣжнѣе ты будешь учиться, тѣмъ легче будетъ для тебя ученіе.

Зима пріятна. Люди суть смертны. Новгородъ былъ богаты. Россія есть обширная имперія. Волга есть царіца рѣкъ Русскихъ. Пріятель мой, вы будете довольны: у насъ есть большіе запасы. У меня завтра будутъ деньги. Ея Величество (Императрица) выѣхала. Его Превосходительство (Генералъ) уѣхалъ. Его Императорское Высочество (Великій Князь) былъ доволенъ. Географія и Исторія суть

Exercises on
the preposi-
tions, p. 185.

Exercises on
the conjunc-
tions, p. 188.

Exercises on
the concord
of words.
P. 192.

весьма полезныя знанія. Молчать трудно. Сколько было тамъ дѣтей? Москва знаменита; городъ Москва знаменитъ. Китай многолюденъ; государство Китай многолюдно. У него есть тридцать одна лошадь. Книга, которую вы читаете, очень забавна. Вотъ человекъ, чьиими трудами пользуемся.

Exercises on
dependence
of words.
p. 200.

Вода есть стихія. Александръ Македонскій былъ великій полководецъ. Татары были свирѣпы. Мой дядь офицеръ; мой дядь былъ тогда офицеромъ. Говорятъ, что кометы были или еще будутъ планетами.

Дождь осыжаетъ землю. Злодѣи ненавидятъ честныхъ людей. Бѣра, опустошившая наши поля, разорила многихъ поселянъ. Говори всегда правду. Мой братъ былъ боленъ всю зиму. Я ѣхалъ цѣлую версту верхомъ. Тебя хвалятъ за прилежаніе. Онъ ударился объ стѣну. Мы сидимъ въ водѣ по шею. Сынъ ростомъ съ отца, и дочь почти съ мать.

Скупецъ предпочитаетъ деньги славу, а воинъ славу деньгамъ. Молнія предшествуетъ грому. Дивлюсь вашему терпѣнію. Нравятся ли вамъ эти картины. Не мсти твоему неприятелю, и дѣлай добро обидѣвшему тебя. Быть чуду. Литья горючимъ слезамъ. Ребенку хочется пить. Сильному человеку не прилично обижать слабого. Подражаніе Іисусу Христу. Любовь къ добродѣтели и ненависть къ пороку.

Вижу глазами, осязаю руками, слышу ушами, обоняю носомъ, вкушаю языкомъ. Измѣнилъ былъ взять Суворовымъ, и Очаковъ Потемкинымъ. Этихъ офицеровъ все называютъ героями. Большой едва шевелитъ губы (или губами). Гнушаюсь обманомъ и лжью. Здѣсь дышать чистымъ воздухомъ. Пожертвованіе жизнью за Государя и отечество. Онъ добръ сердцемъ, но слабъ головою. Утромъ надобно вставать, днемъ работать, вечеромъ отдыхать, и ночью спать. Помири моего друга съ его дядею. Имѣю честь поздравить васъ съ вашими успѣхами.

Сынъ моего искренняго друга вчера уѣхалъ. Дѣти большаго ума перѣдко бывають хилы. Составленъ списокъ офицерамъ нашей дивизіи. Печеніе хлѣба. Я купилъ фунтъ чаю и сажень дровъ. Столько трудовъ и заботъ пропало попустому. Русскіе взяли Парижъ осьмнадцатаго Марта тысяча восемьсотъ четырнадцатаго года. Я не емъ хлѣба, но пью воду. Я емъ хлѣбъ, но не пью воды. Я не получаю ни

письма, ни посылки. Въ этомъ письмѣ нѣтъ ни одной ошибки. Достань мнѣ денегъ. Воины желаютъ битвы и ищутъ славы. Славолюбецъ жаждетъ почестей. Ты хочешь богатства, и боишься труда. Бочка полна вина. Добрый человекъ чуждъ злобы и зависти. Золото дороже серебра; свинецъ тяжелѣе желѣза. Онъ проситъ милостыни ради Христа. Отдыхъ пріятенъ послѣ работы. Вдоль этого берега тянется цѣль горъ. Волки бродятъ около деревни.

Мой братъ хранитъ присутствіе духа при всѣхъ непріятностяхъ въ жизни. Сей городъ построенъ на крутомъ берегу быстрой рѣки. Церковь о пяти главахъ. Онъ плачетъ по своему отцу.

Волшебница.

Одна вдова имѣла двухъ дочерей: старшая была похожа на свою мать и лицѣмъ и нравомъ, то есть, она была такъ же дурна и такъ же зла, какъ ей мать. Никто не любилъ ихъ; всѣ отъ нихъ бѣжали. Меньшая же была прекрасна и добродушна. Всѣ ея любили. Но злая мать и злая сестра ея ненавидѣли; безпрестанно бранили; одна она должна была работать въ домъ, топить печь, мести горницы, стрѣпать въ кухнѣ. Бѣдняжка плакала съ утра до вечера, но не лѣнилась работать; была послушна, терпѣлива, и всё то было напрасно, ибо ничѣмъ не могла угодить на злую мать и на злую сестру свою.

Ежедневно эта бѣдная дѣвушка должна была, съ большимъ кувшиномъ, ходить за водою въ ближнюю рощу, въ которой находился чистый источникъ. Однажды пошла она, по обыкновенію, къ этому источнику. День былъ очень жарокъ. Наполнивъ кувшинъ водою, она возвращалась домой. Вдругъ видитъ передъ собою старушку. «Дитя моё!» — сказала ей старушка: — «дай мнѣ напиться. Я устала; мнѣ жарко.» — «Съ охотою, бабушка!» сказала дѣвушка: «вотъ! напейся!» И она подала старушкѣ кувшинъ.

Старушка отъ слабости сѣла на траву, а молодая красавица стала передъ нею на колѣни, и осторожно поддерживала кувшинъ, пока она пила воду. — «Благодарю тебя, милая!»

сказала старушка, напившись: «Вижу, что ты доброе, ласковое дитя, и хочу тебя наградить за твою услужливость. Знай же, я волшебница, и нарочно взяла на себя вид старушки, чтобы тебя испытать. Радуюсь, что ты такая добрая, и вот, что я хочу для тебя сделать: всякий раз, когда ты скажешь слово, изо рта у тебя выпадет или прекрасный цветок, или драгоценный камень, или большая жемчужина. Прости, дружок!» И волшебница исчезла.

Прекрасная девушка возвратилась домой. «Где ты так долго была?» спросила у ней с сердцем мать. — «Что ты так долго делала в роще?» закричала злая сестра. — «Виновата, замыкалась!» отвечала бедняжка, и в ту самую минуту с прекрасных губ ее скатились два розы, две жемчужины и два большие изумруда. — «Что я вижу?» воскликнула удивленная мать. «Эти цветы! Это драгоценные камни! Что с тобою случилось!» — Красавица просто душно рассказала ей о своей встрече с волшебницею, а между тем цветы, алмазы и жемчуг так и сыпались с губ ей. — «Хорошо же!» проворчала мать: «завтра пошлю в рощу старшую мою дочь, и с нею то же будет.»

И на другое утро, она сказала своей дочери: «Нынче пойдешь за водою ты: возьми кувшин; но смотри же, если встретишь у источника старушку, дай ей напиться и приласкайся к ней хорошенько.» Злая двучонка нахмурилась, с досадою взяла кувшин; нехотя пошла в рощу, и во всю дорогу ворчала. Старушка сидела уже у источника. «Зачерпни мне воды, моя милая!» сказала она девочке: «жарко, хочу напиться.» — «Как бы не так! Я не за тем пришла сюда, чтобы услуживать старым бродягам. Напьюсь и без тебя!» — «Какая же ты грубая!» сказала ей старушка: «Я накажу тебя. С этих пор, при каждом слов твоём, будет выпадать у тебя изо рта или змея или лягушка.» Она исчезла, а злая двучонка побжала домой, разбивши с досады кувшин свой. «Что скажешь, милая дочка!» спросила мать, увидя ее издалека. — «Ничего сказать!» отвечала дочь, и вдруг выскочили изо рта ее две змеи и две жабы! — «Что я вижу! какой страх!» закричала мать. «Но во всем этом виновата твой сестра! Я дам ей знать.» И они бросились бить меньшую дочь.

Она, испугавшись угрозы, скрылась въ рощу, долго бѣжала, не смѣя оглянуться, забѣжала далеко, и наконецъ потеряла дорогу. Но это было къ ея счастью. Царскій сынъ, который тутъ забавлялся охотою, находился въ это время въ рощѣ; онъ увидѣлъ красавицу, которая, сидя на травѣ, горько плакала. — «Что съ тобою случилось? о чёмъ ты плачешь, милая?» спросилъ онъ, взявъ её ласково за руку. — «Боже мой! какъ мнѣ не плакать! Матушка выгнала меня изъ дому.» Она говорила, а цветы и драгоценные камни сыпались съ ея розовыхъ губъ, и слёзы обращались въ жемчужины. — «Что это значить?» спросилъ царскій сынъ: «отъ чего эти цветы, жемчуги и камни?» Бѣдняжка разсказала царскому сыну о томъ, что съ нею случилось. — Онъ полюбилъ её, и полюбилъ ещё болѣе за то, что она была такъ добра и мила, нежели за ея цветы и драгоценные камни. Онъ взялъ её съ собою, представилъ её Царю, отцу своему, которому она также понравилась, и Царь позволилъ сыну на ней жениться. Такимъ образомъ она сдѣлалась Царевною, а по смерти Царя, когда ея мужъ взошёлъ на отцовскій престолъ, Царицею, и была Царицею доброю. А злая сестра ея? что сдѣлалось съ нею? — Она жалостнымъ образомъ кончила свою жизнь. Мать, которую она безпрестанно сердила и огорчала, принуждена была её выгнать изъ дому; никто не хотѣлъ ей дать пристанища, и она скрылась въ лѣсъ, гдѣ скоро умерла съ досады и голода.



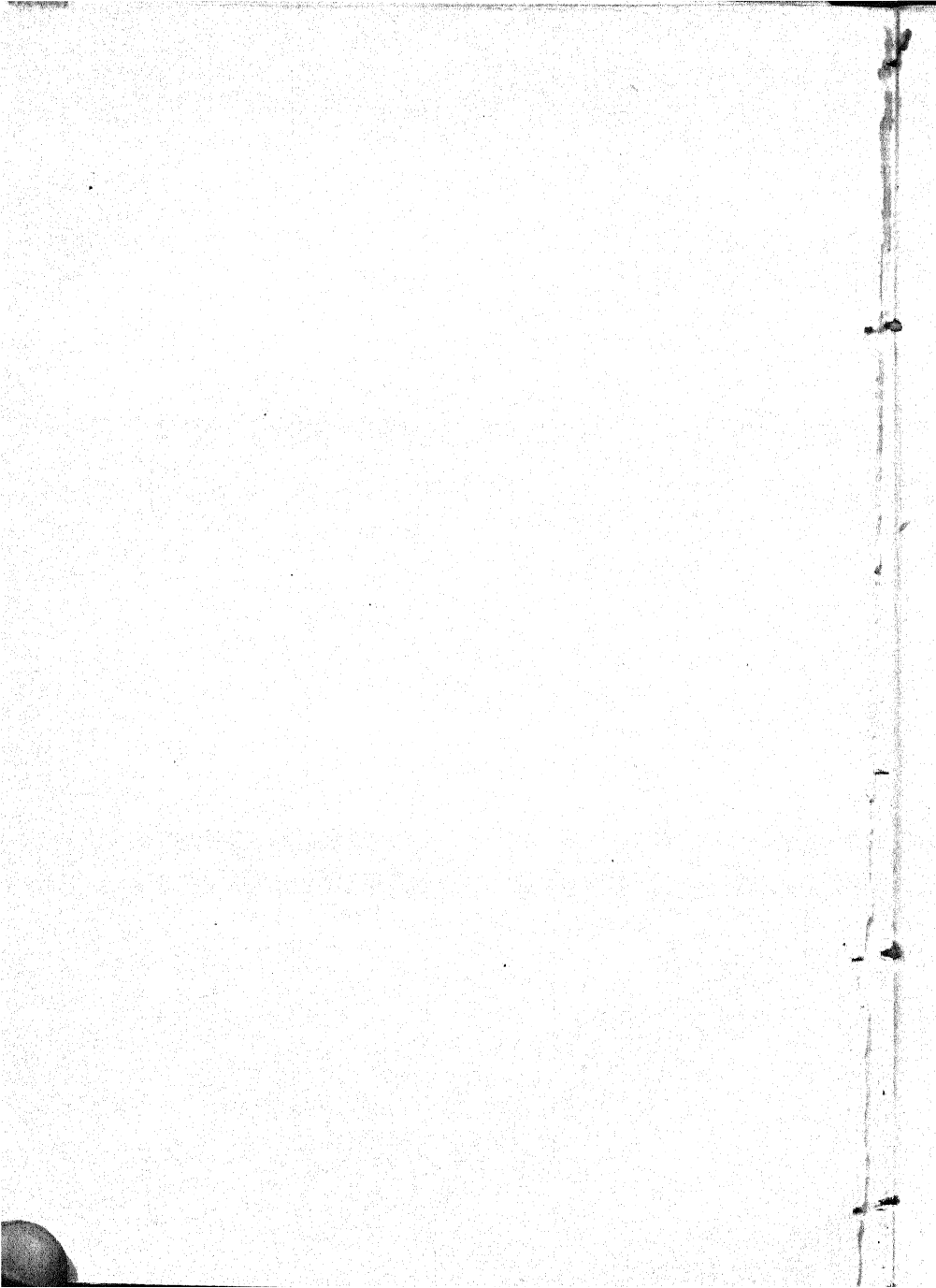




TABLE OF CONTENTS

FIRST PART

LEXICOLOGY.

| | Page |
|--|------|
| Division of the Grammar | 1 |
| Sounds or letters | 2 |
| Alphabet | 2 |
| Division of the letters | 6 |
| Pronunciation of the letters | 7 |
| Vowels | 7 |
| Semi-vowels | 11 |
| Consonants | 13 |
| Syllables and words | 17 |
| Tonic accent | 17 |
| <i>Reading-Exercise</i> | 18 |
| Elements of speech | 22 |
| Division of words | 23 |
| Roots of words | 24 |
| Inflections of words | 26 |
| Metaplasms of words | 26 |
| Permutation of letters | 26 |
| Epenthesis and prosthesis | 28 |
| Apocope and Syncope | 29 |
| THE SUBSTANTIVE | 29 |
| Division of substantives | 29 |
| Properties of nouns | 30 |

| | Page |
|--|------|
| Genders | 30 |
| Aspects | 34 |
| Numbers | 36 |
| Cases | 37 |
| Declension of substantives | 39 |
| Regular substantives | 39 |
| Rules of the declensions | 40 |
| General rules | 41 |
| Special rules | 42 |
| Paradigms of the declensions of substantives | 43 |
| First declension | 43 |
| Second declension | 48 |
| Third declension | 50 |
| Irregular nouns | 54 |
| <i>Exercises in the declension of substantives</i> | 58 |
| THE ADJECTIVE | 65 |
| Division of the adjectives | 65 |
| Qualifying adjectives | 65 |
| Possessive adjectives | 65 |
| Properties of adjectives | 67 |
| Gender, number, case | 68 |
| Apocope of the termination | 68 |
| Degrees of signification | 69 |
| Declension of adjectives | 75 |
| Paradigms of the declensions of adjectives | 76 |
| First declension | 78 |
| Second declension | 80 |
| Third declension | 83 |
| <i>Exercises on the adjectives</i> | 83 |
| THE NUMERALS | 88 |
| Division of numerals | 88 |
| Cardinal and ordinal numerals | 89 |
| Declension of the numerals | 91 |
| Paradigms of the declension of the numerals | 92 |
| Special rules of the numerals | 95 |
| <i>Exercises on the numerals</i> | 97 |
| THE PRONOUN | 102 |
| Division of the pronouns | 102 |

| | Page |
|--|------|
| Paradigms of the declension of the pronouns . . . | 104 |
| Declension of the pronouns | 105 |
| <i>Exercises on the pronouns</i> | 107 |
| THE VERB | 112 |
| Division of verbs | 112 |
| Inflections of the verb | 113 |
| Tenses | 113 |
| Aspects | 113 |
| Moods | 116 |
| Persons, numbers and genders | 117 |
| Forms derived from the verb | 118 |
| Conjugation | 118 |
| Regular verbs | 122 |
| Formation of the inflections of the verb | 123 |
| Paradigms of the conjugations of the regular verbs | 125 |
| First conjugation | 128 |
| Second conjugation | 130 |
| Third conjugation | 136 |
| Irregular verbs | 137 |
| Conjugation of irregular verbs | 138 |
| Delineation of verbs | 142 |
| Simple verbs | 143 |
| Prepositional verbs | 150 |
| <i>Exercises on the verbs</i> | 166 |
| THE PARTICIPLE | 173 |
| Division of the participles | 173 |
| Active and neuter participles | 173 |
| Passive participles | 174 |
| Declension of the participles | 175 |
| Passive verbs | 176 |
| <i>Exercises on the participles</i> | 176 |
| THE ADVERB AND THE GERUND | 178 |
| Division of the adverbs | 178 |
| Formation of the adverbs | 179 |
| Degrees of comparison | 180 |
| Gerunds | 180 |
| <i>Exercises on the adverbs and the gerunds</i> | 181 |
| THE PREPOSITION | 183 |

| | Page |
|--|------|
| Division of the prepositions | 183 |
| Government of the prepositions | 185 |
| <i>Exercises on the prepositions</i> | 185 |
| THE CONJUNCTION | 187 |
| <i>Exercises on the conjunctions</i> | 188 |
| THE INTERJECTION | 188 |

SECOND PART

SYNTAX.

| | |
|---|-----|
| Division of syntax | 189 |
| CONCORD OF WORDS | 189 |
| <i>Exercises on the concord of words</i> | 192 |
| DEPENDENCE OF WORDS | 193 |
| Nominative | 194 |
| Vocative | 195 |
| Accusative | 195 |
| Dative | 196 |
| Instrumental | 197 |
| Genitive | 198 |
| Prepositional | 200 |
| <i>Exercises on the dependence of words</i> | 200 |
| CONSTRUCTION | 210 |

THIRD PART

ORTHOGRAPHY.

| | |
|--|-----|
| USE OF THE LETTERS | 212 |
| Vowels | 212 |
| Semi-vowels | 215 |
| Consonants | 215 |
| Doubling of consonants | 218 |
| Capital letters | 219 |
| DIVISION OF WORDS INTO SYLLABLES | 219 |
| ORTHOGRAPHY OF ISOLATED WORDS | 220 |
| Russian words | 220 |
| Foreign words | 223 |
| ORTHOGRAPHIC SIGNS | 226 |
| MARKS OF PUNCTUATION | 227 |

FOURTH PART

PROSODY.

| | Page |
|--------------------------------------|------|
| Division of prosody | 229 |
| ORTHOEPY | 229 |
| Prosodical or tonic accent | 229 |
| Place of the accent | 230 |
| VERSIFICATION | 231 |
| Tonic versification | 231 |
| Foot or metre | 231 |
| Denomination of the verses | 232 |
| Cæsura | 237 |
| Termination of the verses | 238 |
| Rhyme | 239 |
| Stanza or strophe | 239 |
| Poetic licenses | 240 |
| SOLUTION OF THE EXERCISES | 241 |



Books must be returned within one month of date of issue. Per Regd. Post.

[illegible]

REI

Call No. 491.7

R33E

Accession No. 9784.

Title English-Russian Grammar
of Principles.

Author Reiff, Ch. Ph.

BORROWER'S
NO.DATE
LOANEDBORROWER'S
NO.DATE
LOANEDFOR CONSULTATION
ONLY